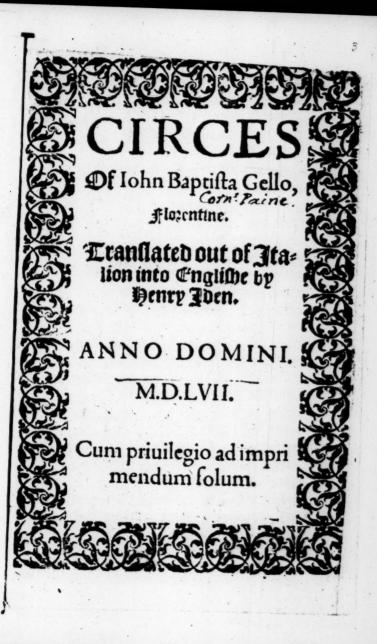
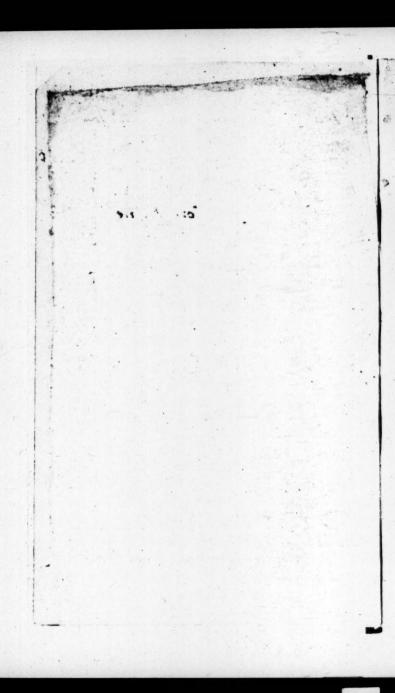
Gello (J. B.) Circes, translated out of Italian into Englishe by Henry Iden, FIRST EDITION, black letter, calf extra, g. e. title mended

Gello (J. B.) Circes, translated out of Italian into Englishe by Henry Iden, FIRST EDITION, black letter, calf extra, g. e. title mended









To the ryght honozable & lozd Herbert of Cardiffe, Mauter Cowarde Herbert, and Matter Henry Compton, his brethren.



Edyng fontymes these Dialoges of Gelli (right honourable, and ing singular god loode and mapsters) and synding them not onelye thought worthy trasta-

tion into other languages, but also bedica tion to kunges, and Punces, 3 fell lyke wrfe together with the instigation of dys uers my frendes, in suche despec to see the fame in oure tounque, that others baue brought to passe in theirs: the whiche has nonge nowe finished as I have belt bene able, and confidering how goodly a glaffe it may be to them that knowe none other language then their owne, to fee herein bome loke the beute beatt, and farre from his perfection man is, without the biders Canding and followinge of dyuyne then, aes: And what his perfecte beinge is, bas Q.u. upng

The Epittle

uvinge that, and mave thereby let aparte. and leave those base and sensual appetites led with mordinate well, takenge a free course aurded by reasonne, by the means of the understandinge : and threewithall remembreng afwell my bounden duetie. both for benefite receaued by the goodnes of vour ryahte bonotable father, and the most gentle affection (3 perswade inp felf pour felues bear towardes me) as also the profe of the undoubted towardnes unto al vertues and knowledge, the myghty mas ker of all hath put into you, in this tome of pour tender ages, as an affured hope of pour most nyghe comminge to bery true perfection: I have thought it my part, as one beforous rather in bedes then mordes to theive mone affured feruice towardes pou, euen as I have of longe time beretos fore ferued in pour educatio, in one equall forte- fo like wife to impart buto you thefe mp finall travelles: though not aunswerable to your bonoure and merites, pet of the belt of mo lotle power, and fomewhat apte for your conference in the Italian or other tounges, the whiche alreadue von incl

# The Opiffle.

well tafte and fanour of. Apoofte humbive therefore befeching, it may please you, to accept this my meane traduction, not fo muche for the qualitie of the mite, as for the great define I have to thewe, not one ly my labours and pains bound buto you but my life also as it may frand in ftebe: The eternal God wzes ferue vou with much encreafe of honoz.

From London, the.rb.dap of Warch.

Pour moste bumble feruaunt. 19. 3den.

parte.

etites

a free

neans

ttball

uetie.

odnes

to the

p felf

o the

tto al

mas pme poof

true

, as Des Des etos all ele er3 tof at 02 U oct

# To the most emyghtie and excellent Prince Cosimo de Medici, Duke of florence.



Mong al thinges that are in the universall worlde, mothe vertuous and gentle prynce, it semeth that man onely can chose of him selfe, a state and ende after his owne mynde, and walkynge in that pathe, that most pleaseth him, canne rather rule his lyfe freely ac-

cordinge to charbitremente of his owne will, then to thinclination of nature. For if p nature of thinges be diligently confidered, to all the special kinds of them, there have bene appointed and wyth an insupolable lawe alligned, by him who is cause of all, certaine boundes, out of the whiche they canne by no possible meanes palle, chaunging into better or worse fort, that beinge, that at the beginning was graunted them. Whereas in the power of man there bath bene feely put an abilitie to chose a way where in he mought lede his lyse most at his owne pleasure. Ind almost like a newe prometheus, to trassione him selse into what he most willed, takynge tyke a Cameleont the colour of althose thinges but the swhiche with thassecte he is most nyghe.

Sud finally to make him selse epther carthy or dis

3 nd finally to make him felfe eyther carthly or bl= syne and to palle ouer to that frate, that to the election

#### The Cpiffle.

tion of his free Soil thalbe moft agreable tohereby tt is plainely fene, that whiles men, either by their ill chaunce, of their noughtie chopfe, lyue holy bent and occupied in worldly thinges, firinge their etes in thefe fenfible obiectes, without any lifting the bppe to the heavens at all, their condition is berpe little better, then that of baute beaftes, og rather they become almost like thother beastes, who wholive lacke reason. And contrary when they wytholawe them the most they may from thence, and retourne to ther owne true and proper operation, and lifting them felucs from things bale and earthip, to things high and dinine, are broughte to their owne trewe perfection, like buto those happie spirites, who out of this corruptible world, live in contemplation of Dinine thinges, their life is molt happy and bieffeb. This is the thing most myghty and ercellet prince, to belpe others the most that in me lieth, as the pro= per and true buette of man is, folowing the fleppes of the most learned Blutarche, that in these my prez fent bialogues , I haue fought as I haue bene beft able. Ind for that like as men are naturally bounde to gene bonoz to God, not onely with their minde and wordes, but also with fome outward figne. of= feringe him of the most bere and precious thonges they have, they also oughte in that forte they befte knowe and can, to bonour alwates their Brinces. because they are (as the same Diutarche faibe ) the bery and true Images of god, for that they keve the fame begree in their fates , that the moft bygh and myghtie God holdeth in the bniuerfall. I bothe by mature and election feruaunt of pour highnes, kno= inge howe muche afwell naturally, as by benefites receined, I am bounde alwaics to honour & fame. 3.iiii. anh

UMI

tare in

mofte

2pnce.

ip can

te and

pnde.

eathe,

pac=

then

ihin= inds

n in=

fall,

e bp

T 0%

was

bere

ers) cas

āf=

nge In=

Dí=

EC:

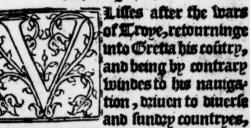
OH

#### The Cpiffle

and not being able to bo it in fuch fort as 3 glablys Swould, befiring at the left to the we the redines of emp good will, haue taken cotage to prefente the fame with thefe, fuch as they are, my fmal trauails, humbly praying your highnes, that like as god him felfe,as greate as he is , neuer ocfpileth anpe gofte. thoughe moofte fmaile and of litte bale we offered him of a pure and fincere minde, the fame now like wife will not fet light this my moft litte gift , fins although it be of the belt and molt bere thinges 3 bauc, it maye feme in bery beebe, to fmai and poose, in respect of your highnes and befertes of the fame. I beleche then finally your excellencee, that recoms penfinge cuery tacke with the goodnes of my will. you will gentellye receiue the fame. Sins 3 befire nothing more, then as my buctye is (beinge pour mood faithfuil and obedient feruaunt ) alfwaies to ferue and honoure pour highnes. from florence the first of Marche. 1548.

Giouanbaptista Gello.

#### The Argument



arryned at the laste in the Islande of Tirces. Where he was by her most gen by received, and there so, many curteses that she shewed hym, taried a certaine tyme, and so delizous to se his countrye agayne he asketh her licence to departe, and also that she would cause all those Gretians, to become men agayne, whom she hadde transfourmed into druces beastes, and were then there, that he might lede them agains into their owne countries.

Tirces graunteth him this fauoz, but yet with these conditions, that onclye they that would should obteine this thynge of hym, and thothers should remayne, to ende theyz lynes there so in bodies of beastes. And because he myghte knowe this thing of them, she grasiteth, to every one of them the power to speake, even as he

coulde

gof

tils, bim

fte,

reb

ing

3

ne.

ire

ar

33

.

#### The Argument

could when he was man. Allilles feketh through al the Iland and speaketh with many, tobo for divers occasions wil rather remaine in that life, then to become men agaphe. Finally finding one, who con-Mering wel the mightines of man, and bowe farre be is more noble then anye other beaft, by meane of thunderstanding belireth to become man agavn as he was. And so being restored by Willes, unto his former being, first as it is the duetie of man) bauing acknowledged and genen thanckes buto the mooft biche and mightie God of all, they retours ned merelpe together into their couns trpe.

# The fyrite Dyaloge. Alphes and Circes, Differ and Poule.



Likoughe the love that thou berelt but o me most famous Circes, thin finite curtes gat all trues I fynd in the, are occasions, that I should

wyllinglye remayne with thee in this thy fayse and pleasaunt Islande: Pet the love of my country, and the desize, (after soo long wandsing) to see my most dere frendes, stirre me continually to depart from the, and to retourne to mine owne house. But before my departure, I would gladly knowe yf amonge those, whome thou bast transfourmed into Lyons, Moines, Beares, and other beastes, there be anye Gretian? Cir. Pea there are manye my most dere Alisses: But why doeste thou aske me thys? Vi. Lette be sytte downe here on this rocke, where both the syste

keth with ther

men

COTT

and

unpe

Das.

bis

e of

uen

nd

The fyzite Dyaloge.

of the druces wanes of the fea, and the pleasauntnesse of the Sweete wonder. that palle through these sauerve plantes. Swetche blowping, shall make oure talke muche moze belectable, and I woll tell it thee. Cir. Let be don what thou wilte Alittes, for I delize none other thonas then to please thee. Vli. The cause whre I have asked thee moothe faire Circes, pf amongest those whom thou haste trans fourmed into beaftes , there be anve Ores tian, is for that I would before to obtaine by my requeste at thy hande, that they myatte be reffeced buto their humanne bernge, and I lede them agavne with me into their owne countrev. And who despect thou this: Vli. love I beare buto them, and for that wee are of one countrye, bopping thereby to be amongelt my Gretians muche pravled. Wabereas by the contrarpe, being knowen that I were able to gette them oute of fo miserable an bubappy state, have suffe red them so waetchedipe to lede their lyfe in bodies of beaftes, I thinke it woulde Cir. be bnto me no fmall blame.

And

And of others, as thou thinkelf Alilles would paple thee for the lame: Det they therfore wold beare the fo great batred for p hurte thou thouldest to them, that thou wouldest revente the thereof a thousands Is it harme then trmes a dave. Vli . to caule one to retourne from a beafte to a man? Cir. De molt harme . And to trve the tructh, aske of thepm, for I will not graunte thee this fauour, ercept they also be contented therewith . Vli. Howe mape I knowe this of them, who bemae Wealtes, understande not:noz vet canne speake: I doubt that thou mocke me.

cir. Chaunge not thy mynd, for I shall graunte theym speache. Vli. And shall they have the self same discourse that they had when they were men? Cir. Yea for lyke as I chaunged them into beastes so shall I cause the knowledge of very me to come into them againe. And sor to lose nonoze time: seest thou those two shelles sastned to yonder stone, that open a shette againe, and that hillocke of earth a little withoute the water, at the soote of that Palme tree? Vli. Yea I see them well. Cir. In those is an Orster, and in tho-

ther

rd the

ndes,

ntes,

talke

tell tt

volte

pnae

whre

s, pf

rans

Bres

aine

thep

ipne

me

and

the

Dee

o be

led.

din

eof

iffe

pfe

lde

nd

# The firste Wialoge. Ther a Wowle, who heretofore were men-

and Gretians, thou shalte speake with them. And bycause thou maiest more frely bott, 3 will gette me bence sportinge me on this frond. And when thou halt vercepued their mondes, come to me and 3 thall doo as thou the felfe wilte. Vli. Truely this is a greate matter that Cyzces bath tolde me, that thefe beinge thus in bodies of beaftes, thalbe able, (and by ber meanes ) to biscourse and reasonne with me . And it semeth to me so incredyble that 3 bare not almost prone it, fering that pf it came not to passe, I should (as reason is be accompted a foole. But here is none belides her that came blame me therefore: And pet canne not the reasonas bly bo it, for that the her felf bath counfats led me therunto and therefore I will not favle to vroue. But home must 3 call the 3 of mp felfe can not tell howe, but by the name that they have beinge thus beaftes: Let me so do then . Dilter, D Dofter. Oist. What will thou with me Ilisses. Vi. I also woulde call thee by the name pf I kneweit . But if thou bea Gretian 88

a

11

Í

b

The spilte Dialogue.

thee to tell it me. Oist. A Gretian I was, before I was chaunged into an Dyster, and I was of a place before Athens, and my name was Itacus: and because I was but voore I became a Frsher.

bane of the knowing that thou wer borne man, and the love that I bere the for that thou arte of my countrey, have caused me to praye Cyrces to restore the into thy former shape, and that I afterwardes may leade thee against with me into Gretia.

ois. Folowe that no farther Alisses, for this thy wisdome and eloquence, for the which thou art so much prayled amongest thy Grecians, have no force at al with mer So that go not about to counsell me with thone, that I leave so many commodities, y which I now in this state so happely entope without any thought at al, nor to persivate me with thother that I shoulde retourne man, synce he is the most unhapper creature, that is in all the worlde. Vi. Oh my Itacus, when thou loss the

Vi. Dhiny Itacus, when thou lotte the thape of man, it should seme thou lott reas

fort

e ment

woth

e frelp

ae me

A pers

E dus

Cm

thus

nd bp

onne

reop-

ring

ld(as

here

eme

ona,

nfat:

not

the:

the

tes:

ter.

les.

me

an

88

The firste Dialoge.

for allo to lave thus. Oyf. Thou can't not leafe it; Alutes thou, because thou balte it not, of thou belove as thou lavelt. But let us fet unuries a parte; and let us ceasing frenchy a little togethers, and t ou shalte see of I that have proved thou life and thother, can she we they that, that is

trelve that I lave.

Vli. Arnely thus woulde I gladdely fee. Oyl. Then barken buto me: But hear rest than : I will that thou promise the that while I open (as thou feelt) to freak, thou wilte watche, that some of these tratterous reabbes, come not and caft a little Morie between my two fieles, wherly ? could not afterward thet my felfe againe. Vii. And whee for Oyli. To maine me afterward forth with his clawes, and to febe bin felf of me, for thus they are wot to do when they finde be open. Vli. See a subtill crafte. And who bath taughte pouto beware of them, and to to fir thefe their decepptes: Oylt. Dature, that never fauleth to any thringe, of that, that is necellarise. Ply. Be withoute feare, and speake safely, for I will watche.

Oyfter.

111

Opf. Go to then harken buto me . Tell me a little Wliffes : pou menne that glozve pour felnes fo much , to be more parfitte, and more wife then we, for that you have the discourse of reason : bo not you estema those thinges more, the whiche von tubas to be better then thother: Vli. Dea be rely, and this rather is one of the chiefe fognes wherby our perfection and wife dome may be knowen . Fozasmuche as the esteming of energe thinge alike commeth of the litle knowing of their nature and goodnes, and is a manifelt token of folythenes. Oyst. And do not you lone them better then thother of leffe estimation one Vlu. De, bycause ener by the knows ledge:enther love or batred foloweth. For all those thinges that appeare good buto be are belowed and defered, and contrarpe those that seme noughte to bs, are bated and eschewed. Oyst. And louvinge them more then the rell, have you not also greater care of theym: Vli. Who bolus teth therof : Oyft. Thinkelt not thou that nature also boeth the selfe same, 03

that intelligence that guideth ber : and

25.i.

with

fer.

canff

e thon

lavelt.

let bs

Dt on

ne life

thatus

lo fec.

t hea-

e me

peak.

trat=

little

bu 3

aine.

e me

nd to

wot

936

ahte

hese

that.

that

re-

#### The fratte Dialogue.

with much more reason then you, because the can not erre, as oftenne times I have harde saye of those Philosophers of Atherics, whiles I, to sell the fishe that I toke, stode by the gallaries, where they a great parte of the daye, disputed and reasoned together. Vi. This thinke I also.

oys. Ps thou graunt me this, thou halt graunted me also that we are better and more noble then you. Vii: And by what meanes: Oyst. Because Pature makings more accompte of vs, then the bath done of you, it followethy the loueth vs better. And louing vs better the both it for none other cause then for that, that I have told thee Vii. What, me thinketh thou arte the best Logitian of Athenes. Oyst. I know not what Logique meaneth, collect howe I may be a Logitian, I speake in such sort as nature bath taught me. And this reason mught every one make.

that bath the discourse of reason, and it is most true. Vii. Dea pf it were true that Pature sette moze by you, then she boeth by bs. Oist. This is east to prove, and pf thou wiste that I shew it thee, barken bonto

p

t

b

h

0

6

0

1

C

1

1

t

onto me, and because thou shalt verceans the better, I will that we beginne from the frast day that the bringeth forthe both you and us into the world, the which is the dave of our birth. Where, tell me I way thee, what eare bath the thewed to baue of you, fons the causeth you to be borne naked: wher contrary the bath the wed to esteme be muche, causing be to come into the world clothed , some with lether forme with heare, forme with scales, some with one thing, and some with an other, the which is a manifest token that the bath areatly in her barte monded our conservation. Vli. This reason maketh not for thee, for though the bath made be naked, and covered be with fo thinne a skinne-that we are burte by every lytie thing the ! .th done it for that me bauing to crercifethe fantalie, and other our inner lenles, farre moze diligently then you. to ferue afterwardes the understanding: it was conveniente that our members. and perticulerly those orgaines, and those instrumentes, wher those overations are made, shuld be of a more gentle, and more 13.u. light

UMI

canfe

baue

Athes

toke,

rreat

oned

haft

ranb

phat

pnae

done

tter.

anon

told

arte

cóff:

eake

ake.

it ts

that

oeth

anb

ken

mto

e.

3

#### The fratte Dialogue.

ingute matter, and to also more subtili bloud, moze hote then poures are, where by the wekenes of our complexion aroweth . For if we wer made of those envil bumos, and those groffe blubbes, that pe are (wherby it followeth that you ar moze Arona and of more lufty complexion the we, but vet not of longer life, for this cos meth of the temperature of p complexion in which thing we palle you bery muche, e therfore we have the perceneraunce of touchinge muche more perfyt then von, to, it percepueth every mote little biffes rence) it thould followe that we thould be of lytle knowledge, and of litle witte as you are. For as thefe Philinomiers lave. the customes of the mind folow the coms plerions of the body: whereby it is ever fene, that to the members of a Lion, the conditions of a Lion, and to the members of a Beare the conditions of a Beare for lowe. And that this is trewe, marke well amonge men, and thou thalt fee, that they who are made of groffe humours, are also grolle of witte, and contrarie, they that are of thinne and quicke flethe, are lyke wyle 1

I

11

1

h

1

r

a

b

b

a

C

V

n

n

ft

ti

#### The forfte Dialogue.

13

wole quicke of witte, lo that nature will lyng to make be reasonable & of most pers fit knowledge, was in maner enforced to make bs lo. Oift. Enforced, no 3 will not beleue this vet, because the making all thinges, mought have made them as the had lifted, and mought very wel baue kepte an other rule, and an other order in them . And for an example, to make that water of it felf, thould heate, & fore thould refreshe. Vli. De but this wonderfull order the which is among all creatures and from whence eche one confesseth his belotie to come, could not by this meanes have bene in the whole world. Oiff. 120 ther Chuld have bene an other fro tubence an other maner of beuty shuld have pros ceded, peraduenture farre fairer the this. Vli. Wibiles we are byon peraduenture we walke as out of the way. But what matter maketh it thoughe nature bath made bs naked, fince the hath genen bs fuch knowledge and ftregth, that we can couer bs with your clothese Oift. De but with what banger how many of you have come to milchiefe, by your myndinge to 13.iii. take

UMI

illite

ber.

ros

llan

t pe

the

S COS

rion

che, ze of

ou,

o be

2B 9

ape.

emo:

euer, the

bers

e fos

inell

they

that

pkes

wyle

# The forfte Dialogue.

take be to ferne your felues of oures. And befodes this with howe great labour : for if you wil be ferued with oure fkinnes. you must dresse them, our heare pou must frinne them, were therm, and to a thoufand other thinges onto them, before pour being them into fuch frame, that you may ferue voure felues of them. Vli. Thefe laboures are swete and pleasaunte buto bs. De they are rather a pallime to be the otherwie. Oist. De, to them that bott for pattyme, as thou fometimes doeft, but afke a little of those, who do it enforced by necessitie and to scratche out by their laboures, so muche as may ferue then, very nede, and thou thalt fee of they will fave, that these paines seme pleasaunte to them on no. I for myne owne parte knowe that whiles I was a ma,it greued me fo much to labour, that (as 3 have told the) 3 made mp felfe a foffber, and I would have will ipnaly put my felfe to any moze beinous occupation, fo that 3 mought not have labosed, esterninge it to bean arte of oren. who alwaies laboure, and when they can mo more, are then knocked on the bed with a betia

14

ures:And bout: for fkinnes. pou must o a thou efoze pou pou map Thefe nte bnto to be the bat do it oest, but ozced by their la enz very ill fave. to them we that o much 3 made ne wile einous aue la foren. ep can d with

a betell. Vli. of thou madelt thee a for ther because thou wouldest not labour it should chaunce to the as it both to al those that five papers. Thou thinkelt it thould rounne after thee, for thou tookelt an arte in bande, wherin not boing it for pleasure, there is more pames then in any other. And belides this, there is infinite troubles of windes, of cold, of hete of the fonne abidden, and of many other things. Of. And thou feelt well, that I will no moze become man againe, and I thinke I have reason, consideringe besides this that nature bath let litle flore by vou, for belives the bringing forth of you naked, the also bath not made you any house or ha bitation, of your own, wher you mought defend you from thiniuries of the wether as the bath made to bs, b which is a plaine token, that you are as rebelles and banithed of this world, having no place here of vour owne. Vli. What houses bath the made to you? Ois. Withat boules: Confider mine a litle of thefe two fhelles, with what great arte and commoditie the bath builte it for me: fee bowe I open and 15.uu. fitte

betla

# The frafte Dialogue.

thette calcivas I baue nebe to febe me, m ear to repole me, and to defend me from fuch as wold hurt me . Confider also inhat the bath done for the Actofices, and for the Snavics, and howe easily they carpe their houses with them.

Vli. And what houses bath the made to the other beaftes, beinge the moze parte, and alio to the birdes: Oyft. For the winter the holes and the bennes of the earth, and for the former, the trees and boll toppes. Vli. Dh, fayze houses, 3 thinke they be there in dede in very great eale. Oyst. Wf there be not fo many come modities ther, as are in pours, nether are there fo many difpleafures and thoughts. Fli. And what displeasures and thoughies bane we of oures that make their after our owne mindes with our own bandes! Wihat displeasures and thoughtes: the marnterninge of them, the reparing of them, and the befending the from thins composities that time bringeth with him? befodes this, when refleth any of you one hower in them with a quiet mpnd, being never affured that they fall not on your backe, and more then that, the feare of the earth4

mp

ple

the

the

nc

be

m

m

fe

P

Se

t

b

1

2

earthquakes, the whiche & remember, co mona beretofoze in our countrie, the peovie feared in luche loste, that the nightes they taried in the fieldes, and the bayes they went togethers on flockes lyke cras nes, waving and crying to the goddes, & bearing about certeine their olde barnes. with freebrandes a leght in their handes, whereby it was plaincipe knowen, that feare ca bo fo much in you, that it caufeth pou bervoften trines to lofe pour wittes. These are thinges that chaunce so feldome, that there is no hebe to be taken thereof. Oist . Befodes this you canne not buride you other houses in cuery place as nature bath bone to bs, or in fuch fort that vou may cary theym after you, as manye of be mave. Vii. And what burte is thes. when we have one after our own minde: knowest thou not that he f is well should not chaunge: Oiff. What burt : pf eupll channce be that you bauc forme neighbour who either by his conditions, or by some science that he bath, is by anye meanes, troblefome onto you, against your mind what infelicitie is the not beinge able to go any other where as we bo : So that re-15.b. tournings

UMI

me,m

m fuch

bat the

for the

carpe

rade to

parte,

02 the

of the

sand

E, an

areat

come

rare

abts.

rbies

after

ides!

btes:

ring

tbin.

him

one

eing

our

the

rthe

tourning to our fast talke, pature be ning be in much more estimation, then pouras I bane thewed thee, e the not able to faple, it followeth that we are better & farre more noble then pou. Vli. This the reason is onely a little apparaunte, for although it seme that nature bath ge nen you many mo commodities, then the bath to be, the bath done it, for that the knew you were not able of your selves, to procure them onto pou. But bere what I shall save buto thee and thou shalt see which of be is more noble. Tel me 3 map thee: whether is the mailter or the fernant moze noble: Oylt. The matter 3 think as maifter. Vli. Thou thinkest well, and fo also among all thinges, the thing is more noble the which is ende of others, then those thinges which are orderned to maintepne of to serve it. Wherof it also foloweth, that we being as your endes, must be more noble then pou. And that we be your endes, and that all you were created by nature to ferue be groe rience sheweth it playnely, sins we serve our felues of you whiles you line, to bere

ott

to

oti

be

fei

th

m

po

th

6

e

VI

81

b

0

ti

b

h

t

6

t

f

oure thinges from one place to another, to laboure the earthe, and to a thoulande other erecules, and after when you are bebe, to dothe bs of pour fkinnes, and to fede be of your flethe. Pow fee then whe ther pou were made by nature for bs or no . Oiff . If thefe reasons were true vou should have bene also made by ber for the erth, for at o last the eateth you al. And to thouwe you also be lette noble then the

earthe, the being your ende.

Vli. This consequence is nothing wooth, and because thou shalt understand it the better, thou shalt note ther are two sortes of endes. Oist. Alisses, I woll not that thou trouble the felfe and moze, for thou bearnnest to enter into those disputatios with me, that I beretofoze have hearde in the galleries of Athens of those Philoso fers, whiles 3, (as 3 tolde thee before) wet about to fell those fewe fifthes that I had taken to prouple me of fuche other necels farres as 3 babbe neede of: the wbvcbc(3 thinke) nepther they noz others knewe.

But I fele that the delive begumeth to fall, whereof I febe, opening me as thou

feeft

16

e bai

then

able

ter e

This

nte,

b are

t the

the

ues.

obat

t fee

vap

lant

anne

ell,

pina

ers.

med

of it

en

and

pou

pe

rue

ere

JUG

feet, wherin I have to great belight, and without any trouble or thoughte at all, that whylest I was man, I never proved the like. So that maruell no more that I will remaine thus. And of thou bus derstandest it otherwise, then be thou soo, and trouble me no moze, for after that 3 baue febb, 3 wil thet me again, and take fome refte, and without any moofte lytle thought at all, the which very selbome chaunfeth to pou. And I efteme moze this mp contentation then al p eucr I mought bope to have at thy bandes. Vii. Truly 3 coulde scarsely have chaunced worse: for it should seme that this felowe was of bery litle bescourse in the world, and the arte that he bid, beclareth it . For all they that attent to folhe or to foule, (I speake of them that do it for nede, and not for ples fure) are tyle versons, and of little know ledge. And marke also bow little know ledge be should bane of the pleasures of the world, fons be would barter therm for a lytic being that he now taffeth being thus an Oviter. Well, let me then thus lene bim in this his milerie, a most fuste remark

UMI

retr

real

tolo

foo '

1110

ner

Mo

ant

qui

11

fox

tha

the

th

m

tia

1

re

pl

tn

ar

m

re

rig

The fratte Pralogue.

rewarde of his follie. And let me proue to reason a lotte with this Boule, & Circes told me was in vonder Billocke of earth. to 3 thall perchance happen on a man of moze knowledge, I will gette me a litle nere ber, and call ber . Moule, D Moule. Mo. What wilt thou with me wiliffese and what moueth the thus to trouble mp quietnes: Hi. If thou knewest what I had obterned of Circes (by my request, for the profitte) thou wouldest not save that I wer trob!esom to the, if thou baue the ble of reason lyke a man. Mo. As though I barde it not even nowe of thee. whilest thou spakest with this other Gres tian, whom the transfourmed into an Dolter.Vli.And that I may cause thee to retourne man, and deliver the from this place and to leade thee agayne with me, into the countrie, so that thou be a Gretu an as the tolde me. Mo. A Gretian 3 was whiles I was man, and of the faprest part of all Etolia. Vli. And Defpe rest not than to be restaged into the fulle shape, I meane when thou were a man. and

UMI

and,

all.

dand

that

bns

loo,

E te

ake

ptle

me

this

abt

ulp

ese:

as

the

ep

ke

les

m

me

of

m

ig is

te

0

#### Die fysite Dialogue.

and to retourne buto thone owne boule. Mo. This is not my before, for the wer Ta fole. Vli Is it folyibnes then to Defviea better fate: Mo. Bo. But to feke to make it worfe, as I thould bo to be come man agapne. Bycause now I live with most gret pleasure in this state, & in this kynd, where as being man, I Could not lo do, but I should lyue in continual troubles, and papnes importunate, wher of bumaine nature is molt aboundaunte. And who bath taught thee this fo Vli. goodly matter: This ignozaunte filber with whom I spake even now: Mo. Cuen experience, mailtres of all thinges, bath taught it me, by the meanes of the occupation that 3 hab. Vli. And in what fort hath experience theined thee that we are more buhappy, and more miscrable then pour Mo. I will tell thee one onely ers pertence, the which(as 3 have told thee) I knew playnely by the meanes of mine erercife of the which , thou afterwardes maple of the felf pecke out many others, that shalbe of no lesse weight then this. vii. And what was the arte that thou Deddid

Bul

fo f

the

3

M

pla

na

fta

m

eu

to

CO

th

to

di

ti

t

0

a

fi

1

b

1

•

The fyrite Pialogue.

avadeft erercyle, that made thee to know fo falle a thinge : Tell on . Mo . To toll the grounde. vli. 3 map wel far now 3 am a fote, to get out of the bandes of a fifter, and to come into the bandes of a plowman, who if be swarue not from bis nature, chalbe much lelle able to buder. stande reason then the other. Mo. Doe me none iniury Alisses with wordes. for every man is a man, and rather take bebe to that that I fave, for pf thou shalte well confeder it, thou wilt perchaunce repent. that Circes bath not changed the also into some beatte, as the bath done bs. Vli. Go to then, lay on, for truely 3 delive no. thinge more. Mo. What beaft findelt thou in all the worlde, evther of the water or of the earth, the kindes of whome are almost einfinite to whome the earth of it felfe bringeth not foorth for bim, where with to fede him, except to man: who . of be will that the bring him forth bis foode. as to others, must laboure it, with great papnes fow it with his bandes. Vli. I has errour commeth of bim felfe, who wil be nourribed with ouer delicate meates. But

18

boule.

ê wer

hen to

out to

o to be

liue

e.e in

bould

inual

inber

unte.

bis fo

aber

Suen

bath

oceu,

t fort

are

then

PETS

bee)

une

Des

ers,

bts.

bou

DeC

But of he woulde inue of the frunte that the of her felfe bringeth footh, as other beaftes to, this should not chaunce buto bum. Mo. And what graffe, what febe and what fruites, bungeth thee of her felfe forth, not beinge holpen by arte, that are meete noushmente and conveniente for the confernation of the lyfe of man. for the mayntenaunce of the temperature of bis complexion. Vii. Is it not sape that those friste auncrente people, of thage that was called the golden age, bybbe line for Mo. D Mipstes, thou makest profestion of a wyle man, and vet belevet thou these tales: Vli. Wel, when that also that thou savest wer true vet this laboure that man endureth to laboure and tell the grounde, to water and keepe the bynes, and to plante fruvtes, both it not barrige there with so greate belvte and pleasure, that it may be lavo, that nature bath geven it to man, for his pallime, and for that be thould not live in Itlenes, and after for his welth and profpt: And that this is true, marke what large rewarde of frupte the geneth after warde for his paynes.

TI TI

11

t

21

th

fe

21

ar

pl

at

th

De

m

The first Dialogue.

varies! Wiberby it femeth that nothings is more finete then bulbandive. And beforces this the bath done it. for that manne thould have wherivith to theire his wit. and cunninge, and bowe be is worther then the other beaftes are. Mo. rather because the thould never take reft, na neuer have one good howee. And bewees this to trouble bim more, the feare of beath is ioned to him in fuch facte that when the earth throughe contrarpe we thers - beingeth not foorth fo largelye ber frutes. one yeare as the mas wont, be all that time liveth in daunger and feare, that he be not enforced to due for hunger. and be never eateth morfell withoute a thoulande griefes, the which thinge chairs feth not to bs . For when there wanteth anne thinge in the place, where wee are, we go most bappelpe into an other. vli. So that we also can not cause thorn ges to come out of those countries, where there is haboundaunce, when there is dearthe in our owne. Mo. But with what labour and daunger both by fea and lande & And with what buquietnes of C.i. mpnde

UMI

e that

other

bnto

dns.

felfe

it are

te for

e for

reof

that

bace

e line

pre

enest

that

s la

and

e the

not

and

ture

and

amb

that

arbe

e bis

nes.

## The fyrite Dialogue.

monde: the which is a farre greater mate ter. Let this luffife thee that pour life is nothing els then a continuall Arpfe, now with one thing, and nowe with an other. to that you have good reason to wepe as pe do when you are borne (the whiche none of bs both) confidering the infelicitie and milerve of the Cate wherebuto von come. vli. Wie can not were therefore, for that we knowe it not, as thou boelt. Me. Although vou knowe not, vet vou begin to fele thincomodities of the plate where pour come to inhabite, the whiche (as 3 baue tolde thee) as it is to all other beaftes accommodate, it is to you onelye, almoste contrarve, and therefore wermac is as nen onely to you by nature. Vii. Bow to be onelperboth not the horse wepeallo, as I have bearde lave. Mo. I beleue not but I thinke, that those teares, the which fall at certaine trines from their eves, growe by superfluitpe that ascendeth to the bedde: for that the borfe is a berve belis cate beaft. And of be wepe, be bothe it for fome mischaunce that is happened onto bim, as it mought be, to chaunge a matter.

82

m

tn

Di

in

et

fo

b

ol

th

n

fo

Ė

1

DE

6

b

fi

1

The first Dialogue.

or to lafe the company of forme other bor whom he, theyng bery apte to love by na ture) bab loued: but he booth it not thune diately after his birth, as you doos, who. in Debe have reason therto(as a tolde thee even noise) confideringe that you muffe forthwith be bounde and be 'nourvibed by the handes of others. Acyther can you of your felues do any thing at all, of thole thyracs, that belonge buto youre ofore nature. So that Willes labour no more. for 3 for my parte, am one of those that ful rather due then become man agavne. Mi. Dim Boule, it semeth thou thouls best also have bone, as I lapbe to ponder. Defter that at one time thou loft of thape of man and reason also. And of thou wilte fee that to be true that I tell the: confeder what beaftes you are, for pf you wet perfit in bede, I woulde lave that you babbe fome reason. Mo. Wilhp, what dooe we lacke: Vii. What do you tacke: Thops fer the fente of fmellinge and hearonge. and that that is more, the abilitie to moure frome one place to another: And thou the fighte, the whiche thou knoweste howe worthve C.y.

r matilife is inomother, epe as obtiche clicitie

ec,foz

Mo:

egun

ohere

as 3
altes
note
see
bow

allo, e not buch ves,

th to deli-

t foz into Ger

0

#### The forte Dialogue.

inouthy it is to be hadde in maice, gentungs knowledge buto bs of mo differences of thunges, then any other fenfe. Mo. 2012 are not therefore buperfite-but we are fo called by you, in respect of those that have theymall: but we thoulde be imperfit in Debe, of we lacked any of those that belongeth buto oure konde. Vli. Shoulde it not then be better to have them? Mo. Pot the light to me, as a Poule: nevther to Thouser the smellinge, or bearinge, op abilitie to go from place to place, as an Dofter. And of thou will knowe the reafon thereof , berken buto me ! Tell me 3 way the, why is the power to move from one place to another acuen buto you, but to go for those thinges that ve lacke ? Vii. Pature truelve bathe not geuen it bs for any other thinge: And therefore it is larbe that enery motion groweth of the nede. Mo. If you then had that nigh buto you the whiche pour had nede of, pour woulde not mouer Vi. Ro: Why thould we Mo. What neve then bath that Doller of the motio from one place to another, pf the have by her all that, that the bath nede of

of

ge

ar

m

at

th

fig

T

b

n

21

k

n

a

a

n

t

t

b

D

£

1

ì

Í

# The fyzite Dialogue.

of? Ann likewife of finellynge, nature acuings ber wher with to feebe, withouts any nede to feke what is good for ber and what is not . And foe 3 , that mufte above binder the earth. where I find that that contenteth me what neve have I of fight : Vli . Although it be not necessas rpe buto thee, pet thou shouldest desire to baue it. Mo. And who for Sons it is not necessarye to my nature, it is suffici ent to me, to be perfit in mone oinne konde. Defozelt thou to baue the broght nes that a starre bath-or the winnes that a both hath: Vli. These are thinges that appertaine not to menne. Mo. 19f other men had them, mouldelt thou then defree them? Pli . De I thinke fo. Mo. And the like would 3 do.pf other moules fains but fince other fee not, I nevther thinks on it not pet defre it. So that labour no farther in perswadinge me to retourne man, for that 3 am perfecte in thos mp kynd, and line without anye thoughte in the worlde, I will so remaine, because I fond herein farre fewer difpicalures. then I dod in the humanne lyfe. Go then C.M. aboute

UMI

upitas

ices of

SEE

are fo

t baue

rfit in

elon

lde it

vtber

nge,

is an

rea.

R on

rom

bat

Vli.

foz

ada

De.

ugu

ilde

per

Ter

pf

ede

of

10.

## The firste Dialogue.

about the busines; for 3 will get me a lotte farther under the earth. Vii. 3 know not wel whether I wake, or werner of I wake truely I am no more the fame Whiles that I was wont to be, fins I have bene able to cause nevther of these twarne to belove the trueth. And I bears tofore was wonte to persuade to my Bretians, what fo ener I mp felfe lifted. But I think the befault to come of them: for I baue chaunced on two, who are not able to understand reason. And it is alto no great maruel, thone being a folber & thother a plowman. But I thinke it Chuld not forbappen buto me, with cuery one of the rest, of perchaunce they be not of one forte all. 3 will then retourne to Circes and thewe her howe I have fped, and may ber that the favle me not of almuch as the bath promifed me, and that the saule me to freke with some other, for 3 Moulde thinke it to muche inturie.

though these never knowe, new ther wil know any good, to sayle of this benefite to the reste.

..

Crices, Alilles, the Snake.

Hat lay these thy Greatians my dere Alisses, us ther any of the that wil become man against Pli. Hot one. It is true that I have spoke ones by with those two that

thou shewcold me, of whom those was a fysher, and thother a plowman, whose lines were so miscrable and painefull, that I nothinge marnell they will not prove the state of man agayne. Cir. Thinks thou not Alpses, that I have done this at adventure, so, I was will lyng thou shouldest beginne with those to see, that also in these base states, the whiche have bene heretosore so muche prayled by many of your waters, there are so many incommodities, that the most byle and impersyte beastes that may be sounde, are in better case then they: And they

me a

li. I

e fame ins 3

f thefe

beare

ym o

lifted.

them:

o are

is ale

bers

hald

ne of

fone

irces

and

tuch

the

E 20

...

they have thewed thee, the reason theros. Thi. De but then the matter is, whether this come by the final knowledge of them at not for furely they thould be men of most litle witte, sins that state wherein they were, semed eupli buto theym, e pet they not able to channge it. Cir. The wit and wifedome of men is farre better knowen, in being able to accommodate them selues to line quietlye, in that state wherin they are, then it is in chaunginge it, as also in the knowledge of players, in playing those games well, that come to them by chaunce, althoughe they be envil for in thone, knowledge and wifedome worke onely, and in thother fortune: br to whole arbitrement wase men alwaies seke the least they may to put the selucs. 74. Thou knowest Circes that there is no kynde of creatures, amongelt whom areter differences are found, then among men, among whom pf thou confider well thou shalt find some of such knowledge and wotte, that they are almost loke but to the goddes, and some others of so groffe wette, and finall knowledge, that thep femo

UMI

inb

oth

one

kpi

tho

to 1

thi

T

m

ha

all

th

EU

f

kı

fr

tt

(a

k

a

The fecome Dyaloge.

ferme airmost bestes. So p it is ofte bouted, whether they have reasonable soules a not, the whiche chaunfeth not to anve other beatte. For of thou loke among Lie ons, and Beares, camongest what other kond thou will, thou thalt fee thouse from thother bery little different. And thefe two to whom thou haft caused me to speke, 3 thinke are truely of those, who knews bery fmally, either the good of al, that was m their owne states, and therefore they have bone as all other like, who thinks alwaies other states farre better then they owne. Cir. If the good and the euplies that channee onto a man in that state wherin be lineth, coulde onelve be knowen by witte, and buterstanding. wold then thinke thou fardeff truth. 18ut they are knowen by proferand experience (as thou knowest) causeth eche man to knowe thrnges as ther are. But above. thalt speake a lyttle with that Enake that commeth traverling the way towardes bs, for as 3 remember me, be whome 3 chaunged into ber, was a Gretan, and be perchaunce thall fatisfie the farre better, C.b. then

UMI

erof.

ther

bent

nof

Tein

ret

The

tter

ate

tate

nge

Lin

eto

Ildi

me

und

ies

CS.

is

m

ta

L

Te

170

Te

P

then thefe other have done. And I for this cause bo give ber power to answere thee. and to weake buto thee. Vli. It hould seme that the boverstandeth that thou talkelt of ber for that the standeth so still. Redfaffly beholding bs. Cir. It mave fo be, but speake onto her, and I in the meane feafon will walke amonge thefe my nimphes to valle the time along this fea banke. Vli. 3 had so much pleasure to freake with those other two beaftes.ale though I coulde not persuade them to that that I would, and that that is true. that I am also betermined to talke with this fnake. Snake. D Snake. gna. Wilhat wilt thou Alrifes: But alas I buderfrad 13 fpeake, whether 3 be tourned agains into man, as I was beretofore: God for Vii. And what is the cans bud this. Smake, that thou wouldest not become man agavne? is the state wherein thou lyuedit perchaunce the cause: aot fo, but the nature it felfe of man, the which in very dede is none other thing the a lodging of unferies. Pli. Let me make meckening, J have even chaunfed on an othes

UMI

ofhe

bear

mak

mbo

bath

this

The

to fu

#O

to d

not

told

base

that

ther

vli,

told

wbo

1Ber

form

hot

## The seconde Dyploge.

other like buto the frast twanne. Smake beare me a lytic. It is in my power to make thee retourne man , for Cvices whom I have praire, for the love I beare onto you because we are of one country. bath grannted it me. Powe may I bis this goodly benefite buto thee. Then do it to some other, for I way then to fuffer me to ende mp life after this fort. For truely 3 Chould have to great a loffe. to chaunge this state with yours. Vli. Wiby, what is the causer Sna. Haus not they with whom thou halte lookentolde thee: Vi. They were men of to bale condicion, and of lo final knowledge. that I make little accompt of their words. Ina. Did they not thew the, the refon who they woulde not become men agapnes vli, Thone of them who was a friber, told me: because he wold not take thought where to dwell, the whiche care other Beaftes have not, who above, some in the bollownes of the earth, fom in the woodes fome on the trees, some in the water-and fome in divers other places: and thother. who was a Plowman, for that be would not tyll the earth, the which not being tilled

fhis

bee.

dino

tal

till.

ave

the bele

his

ure

,al-

ne,

ith

at

ád

ne

20

í

ne

100

II,

followand formen by man, by maeth not foode forth for him of her felf, as it both to other beaffes . Sna . And 3 , who , whiles I loued was a Philitian, well thewe the another, the which is buto von an occasion of farre greater milerie, the they wer. And pet ther mo fuch befece ch be made as mai be made in thart of bulbaby, e thart of building, wherin man is to ercellet. Vil And what is that : Tell it me I way thee. Sna. The meakenes of the complercion. that nature bath genen to you, by the whi che vou are subjecte to so many kindes of infirmities, that it can never be lavo, that you are at any time perfectly in bealth.as we are. And befodes this, you are never la luftve-but for euery little mostule vou do, you feare to be ficke. Vh. This as I fapbe before to them) nature hath bone, because we mave better boo our overatis ons, the whiche we thoulde not fo eafelve have don, if the bad made be of mattiers. of bumours, and of bloude, fo groffe, and firence as the bath made you. Sna. Rave. rather the bath bonne it, to make you the most fick and weake creatures that are in the

> can bar by a fick are not nat

pou

are leri the of i fuc bei

the world. Vli. And when this that thou farest iver true, can not the beware of that that hurteth be with that wilbome that the bath geuen ber Sna. "De in Come part. but it is fo hard, that thou feelt bow felve bo it. But wilt thou fe that the bath done it, onely for that the is your enemier Seet thou not that the bath genen buto you are appetite of feding to bulaciate and a defpre fo umnoderate, that you ceafe not con tinually to feke neive meates? And wben pou have found fuch as pleafeth pou, pout can not then measure your selues, 02 berp barbely eate as thould fuffice you, where brafterwardes fo many and fo greuous ficknelles growe on vou. Vli. are these meates that we ble, that were not made by nature, for our mainte naunce and conferuation? Sna. are thefe meates ! infinite, and perticus lerivall those that you ble to make good the others withall, and that are not good of them felues to eate, as is falt, peper, and fuch like. Fly. I for my part have whollp belened the contrary : Dea, rather I have beard fave, that man coulde not loue with

b not

oth to

biles

ethe

ccafie

wer.

e as

bart

.VA

bee.

lon.

whi

sof

bat

as,

uer

ott

(as

ne,

ati:

lpe

rs,

dn

P.

he

trr

38

without falt. Sna . Because of the superfur ities, that is ingended through over much eating, and drinking, the which must afterward be bried. But of be were nours thed of limple meates, and fo much onely as neved, Superfluous bushozs should not be engenozed, noz they thoulde not neede to be baved . But the matter franceth in thus pointe, that man with thefe fainces (for so are al those called that are not good of them felues, but make others good) maketh his meates fo much better and of more appetite, that prouoked by the delite that is therein, be eateth much moze then be bath nede of. And belides this, he is pric ked and flirred by the varietie of taftes.to brink much inoze, then his nature require reth. Wilhereby growe after in bim fo masnp Catarres, reumes, fwellinges, goutes tothe ache, that they must after be pluc ked out, and a thouland other infinite mufchiefes, that folowe afterwarde thereof. the whiche never chaunce to anve of bs. Fli. Surelve in some part hereof thou laps eft true. Sna. Then confider be, that because nature bath loued us better, the bathe

bath 1 appel to the fami will i can n fortefurth alfo, incor ming tes . fintell the b as it rotto the u pzeti not g then tono met Done titie é wi ons the

bath not geven buto be this fo burnly an appetite, wherby we have defuze onelve to those thinges that are good fer us, and fo much as our nature requiretb, and me will not one morfell about thes, nor toe can not bary-oz minale our metes in fuch forte, that they may enforce our appetyte with the pleasing bs . But feelt thou not allo, that because you should fal into these inconveniences, the bath caused von to minale, of those thinges with your meas tes, that were plainelye objectes of the imelling, because they thouse please pour the better, and the caseller decevue yous as it were to lave the mulke, whiche is a rottones of an impoltematio of one of bs the which thou wouldest not take for any pretious thinge: wheras to be the bathe not genen any other pleafure in finelling then of these thinges, that are necessarpe to nonrishe bs, and so much onelne also as we have neede to cate. Vi. She hathe bone this for p we had nede of greter quas titie of braine, to proportio of other belts b which is naturally cold for of the operation ons of pinner fences mult be exercised in the fame, to ferue the understandinge,

Tue

uch

af.

rp

elp

tot

305

in

es

OD

(00

of

te

ent

cic

to

Da

Bs.

25

C

af.

1,

20

1

.

8

the may formetimes bete it, with fanours the which are naturally all bute: inbereof we are bound buto ber, because the haths genen he this belite, and pleasure, of finel lynae of good thinges, the which the bath not done for you: for you have pleasure of mone other thyrace then of that that your meates have. Sna. I wol tell thee true: I cannot well betermine with my felfe, Inbether your havinge of this fense more verfite then we, be evther to your loffe, oz garnes, the euil smelles are so many mo that you finell, then the good. And bath not the caused that you pour selues also in gendre in pour owne bodies, lo greate a quantitie of superfluities, that all they al most engendre euill sauours, the whiche is not le with bs: the whiche thinge is a mooft manifelte frane, of the weakenes, and of the unperfectnes of the complerció of pour nature, subiecte, and bonde (as 3 have tolde thee ) buto fo many and duers Acknesses, the which are not eue knowen by bs. Seeft thou not that in the eies one lye, there be mo then fuftue kindes of fickmelles: Vi. And when this were lo, we baue

bane meanes to remedie it. Sna. Ant hoin: Vli. With Philicke, in the which art man is most excellent, and thou shoul best know it if thou were a philition as thou fault. Sna. This is the point that would take becat , for in this a thinke men much more buhappy then we. Vi. And why for tel me thoreasion a litte. Sna. Because I thinke that medicines doeth farre moze hurt in vou, then good: and that you in bling them, are not in vour wittes, and I alone am not in this opinion: for thou knowell well, howe many cities baue ben in vour Gretia ivho baue probibited and dituen from them. the Bhilitions. Vli. And who swell thou this? Willte thou denve that Whis Acke is not one of the feuen liberal artes. most true, a most profitable to man, take bede that this come not out of the mouth. that thou thewe not the selfe one of those who had therein no greate knowledge. and therfore blamest it; obserumge the cultome of many, who when they knows not a thing, fay it can not be knowers and that others knowe it not. Sna. Will D.1.

UMI

fanours

inhereof .

be batha

of finel

the bath

alure of

at pour

ce true:

w felfe.

se moze

loffe, oz

amp mo

d bath

allo in

reate a

ber al

vhiche

re is a

senes,

leraõ

(as]

luers

owen

one

flick

, we

baue

will not benve that the lame of it felfe is hotan affe most true and profitable and morthe standar pravles, nor I wolt not alio better that I knewe berr lytle therof. even after that forte as others lokewole thowe little therein, but per ur fuch fort as it may be knowe, I know fo much therof that I was reputed amongo the chiefe Whitios of Gretia, and thou rand bears good withes thereof. For 3 knows thou half heard infinite times of Agelumis of Lefbos. VII. Arte thou then Agefinus of Leibosethou, or to fave better, pipirite of him! Suc. am be in Debe's that goma to fe the world; arraicd here by thou, and was thus together with any columns nions chautited into a beatter will 3 and betriglab to speake with thee; for the fame is pet fo great through all Gretia. that I Chould thinke to gette no smale thong, of I moght leade the unto them agavne a man as thou were be fort. . Jus. Df this I tell the true that then reason no more, for I wal never contentedbere onto. And becanfe thou mavefolee that a Doo it not without reasonne, 3 sape onto thre

ſ

ā

n

t

t

2

h

Ú

p

h

D

2

ti

7

t

2

-1

1

t

d

the retourning to our former talke, that philike mave be two waves confedered. Firste,it may be considered as a scrence. and in this manner it is most true and moofte fure, because it onclve considereth the thinges oniverfall, the which for that they are enertallinge, and not bariable, engender a furetie in bs . And in this inife knowinge thinges by their occasions, it is called a fcience and belongeth to coteme plation thende wherof is onlye to knows the trueth. And manne after this forte knowe it, a allo knewe my parte there of. Whilike mave lokewife be confidered as an arte, and artes (as thou knowell) come by experience, and after thes forte it is most deceitfull: and that this is true philitions them felues confesse it: saving that experiences in this arte are bery beceitfull. And thus it appertaymeth buto the active, the ende wherof is the wor honge and tranaplinge aboute the particuler thinges, and in this forte 3 confesse bento the f ther is most litle knowe therof D.u.

UMI

icife ts

le-and

phi not

berof.

cipole

fort as

therof

chiefe

beare

thou

nis of

mus

(pirite

at go

Chop,

भागवा

111 3

or the

retur,

**imale** 

theur

cdus.

malon

there

hat A

the

## Die lecond Dinlogue.

and experience dayly thewethit. This from whence gottelf thou the reputatis that thou babbelt, of thou knewest lyttle howe to worker sua. From the foolphi nes of manye, who gening oftentymes final bebe to that that men bo, fuffer them scines to be deceived by that that they say, VII. Truely men in their own cales, les light a very little way. Sna. And in this about all others, for the ocfore they bane to lyne. And of thou wilte fee it plainely, marke, that of those faultes that they punythe others, they pape us by weighte of golde, the which faultes are so many and to arenous, that it wer ill for be if the erth hobbe them not : as one of oure wife men of Gretia lande heretofoze, who one dave beinge asked, what thoccasion was that be neuer badde fickenes, aunswered: be cause be never had to do with Philitions. Vi. Then that other our worther manne onderstoode it well, when he sape: that good Philition neuer toke inchainc.

Sna. Then thou shouldest have abook that other sayinge also. Vis. Whiches

Sna.

fin

me

the

m

CP

th

an ba

1

is th

2

is

fi

0

u

1

1

1

1

Sax. That one good man of lawe, never Arrueth with another. But vet there is a worle thonge, that to mannetavne thus their descripte in reputation, they gene men to understande that they take mede concescaulinge the pottecaries to orderne them, and to lende theym to their houses, and they then cafe theymaway. And 3 baue knowen of those that dooe it. Vli. Wilho knoweth not that this your lining is a decepte! And that we do none other thinge then one begyle an other. And the greteffe occeptes that they dooe is, where beliefe playeth the chiefe parte, for berein they practile more then in anpe other thonge. Vh. Thou feelt well it as wonte to be lapoe, that the beliefe that a paciente bath in the Philition , helpeth bom often times, muche more then the medpeones, and he that canne persuade moofte falfelve, actteth moste credutte. Sna. 3 knewe it berve well, foz, foz bes prige able to speake well, and to persuade well, and chiefelve onto women (to whole myndes vbilitions are most tomes taken. D.iv. and

UMI

Vii.

utatil

lpttle

trines

them

p fap.

les les

in this

bane

inely, ep pu-

bte of

pand

e erth

Dape

that be

trons.

anne

: that

deddi

tiche: Sna.

# The fromb Dialogue.

út.

tt

in

a

G

1

8

I III

1

and not for being able to worke well? became in great credite. But abide Wife fcs, wilt thou fee that men knowe'not by philicke perfectly that gene a thouland P remedies for one disease? Vii Hows many remedies the mo a philition acueth for one lickenes, is it not a liane that he knoweth the moze of the arter Sna. Cleane contrary, for the gening many remedies to one cupil, is a token of not knowing his proper remedy. For even as all effectes, have only one proper occas fion, that cause them, although they may be afterwarde brought forthe accident tally by many other occasions, so every zuill bath his proper remedie, and who that knewe it should heale the same buy doutedly. So that when thou feelt one geue thee many remedies to one onely cuill, sape that he knoweth not the very proper remedic, and goeth about to feke tt. And then it must be (as they say) that God mufte helpe pon. Vli. Thinke then if we be not well to chaunce into pour handes. Marke it, and Sna. therfore there are many that lage, that # W

thema it is better to take a luckie Philition nde This then a learned. Vli. What meaned thou owe not by a luckie philition: Sus. one inhose bouland pacientes, for the more part that chaunce Botos into his hands, may be fene healed by him. For he is wel called fortunate, the more geneth parte of whole bulines hath good ende. thathe and that in things doutefull be ever chanfeth to take the belt. for as I have tolde thee, it is so harde a thinge in philicke. to apply butuerfals, to perticulers, that the pacient bath nede of good chaunce, or elle be is in greate balarde. Thould for this thinge complayne be of men, and of theve courtoulnes, lins they fet bs to do that, that they know not, one . Ip because they would gavne. Spa. 30e but much more of nature, who bath not so provided for your health, as the bath for ours. Frest for that the bath genen you a complexion so weke, and an appetite so brocknate, and then for that the bath taught vou philicke after fuch forte that it is rather to your hurte then profete. Vh. Wahat hath nature done in this better buto pon then to bee

D.ini.

Sonaka

Sna.

mamp

of not

v euen

er occas

ep map

CCIDEN

euerp

d'inbo

ne bru

It one

onely

e berv

o feka

b) that

binke

e into

anb

.that

it is

Sna. She bath fyzite genen buto be a complexion to ftronge, and a before to well ruled, that it never provoketh be to do anye thinge that is against our nature, and befodes this, for our bileales, farre moze perfecte philycke then to von. Pave I will that thou proue this otherwise then with wordes onely. Sna. Df the godnesand Arength of the complexion, because it is a thinge of it felfe mooft well knowen, 3 will not reason with thee, but of the temperature of the appetite. Confider frast the maner bowe we fede, and thou thalt not fee that any of be have before, but of those meates that are convenient to his nature and to take also of those onelve that quantitie, that is necessarie to his nourishement. wher as to you it is all contrarie: For you have before of a. M. things that burt you. and vet can von not moderate vour felues that von cate no moze of thefe thmes that please you, then your nede requirethe Vli. Eruely herein you are more happy then we. Sna. What that I also say of winking? For we dinke oncly to much as nedeth bnto

bn

fel

th

ar

th

Th

th

ſ

h

r

t

1

.

t

1

bnto our confernation. You fuffer pour felues bery often to be drainen fo much by the delite that you fele in b wine, that you are not only bronke but also von get there by a thousand licknesses. Vlis. 3 will not that thou weake of this, for nature bath thewed in this, to love be farre better then vou bauing genen buto bs onely. so mecious a licour. Sna. Pea, of the had genen you therewith an appetite, ruled in suche sozte, that vou wanke not thereof more then you never: but fonce the bath not bone fo, it is euch to baue scuen a thong that is of no leffe burte then belye, into the band of one that bath no indgement, or elles will fuffer bim felfe to be ledde by and downe by define. Vi. Thou mightest speake of this thing of wine a thousand peres, and per would I never velde onto thee. Sna. Then in the luftes of the flesh bo not von suffer vour felues to be carred fo farre therin through pleasure, that you act therby moost often times your beath, the which thinge ne ner happeneth to bs. Kather nature bath made to muche accompte of be berein, D.b. A ... firat

to be a live to be to be

7.

of the of it il not ature tancre that entes no to title, tent, pour lues that

Vli.

that the luffereth be not to come into fuch deflers, but at certaine times, and those only are, when we have nobe to call forth thole superfluities, or when the time is most apte to generation . Vli. Walbat. is there not then founde among you of those who are alwaies disposed to the like pleasures. Sna. And who is this! the mare, and like beaftes, that mactife amongo pou, to serue pou at nede, who also perchance thalbe by you prouoked buto luch actes, for your profet. But palls further bnto other thinges that are lought; for the conservation of bealth. And consider a little as touching the aier, the qualitie wherof is of molte great importaunce, for that we must continually in fetting our beeth, fill therwith our unner partes. Ecthom findest thou amongest bs, that is not in the fame place and aver, that is to most purpose, and most convenient for him, of they be not winen thence by force. and caried fome other where Wilhcreas vou bery often both for delive to gapne, and also for a thousand other occaspons, co, feking countries, to abobe in place, Sobere

w

th

24

u

n

k

9

t

Ġ

where the aver is to contrary buto pour, that you procure pour ofone beath before the time. Vli. This can ill be benieb. Sna. Of the Cepe, and of the vict, and of other necessaric thinges for the conservation of the complexion, and of your belth, 3 wol not reason, because you your schues knowe, that can not ble them in due time. And this cometh because vou are brought thereinto, evther by arte, or els by your owne fantalies, wher the, who ble them onely, when nature requireth, nener erre, by the which occasions, we Wiptes are subjecte unto many fewer infirmities then you are. And unto those fewe, every one of be auided by nature, can funde of bim felfe the remedo. Vli. And is this true! Sna. It it molte true . And by this thou mayest playnely knowe bowe much nature bath loned be aboue you, fins the bath taught to every kind of be remedies for those enilles, to which the fame kond is fubicct. And not onely buts the kynd, but also buto eche one of them fenerally beuided.

to facts

slout o

t forth

ime is

Mbat.

ou of

e like

nare.

tonge

per4

doub

rther

for

foder

alitie

Ince.

ttina

rtes.

that

at is

t for

nce

reas

mes

ms,

LOP.

KLE

Thi. Trulpe bereaf thou makelte me much maruell. Sna. Sins thes femeth so great a matter buto the, 3 well not that thou be latisfied with wordes . But bearnne a lytle to confider be Snakes. of whom every one, when the founde of the yeare commeth, perceiupng our fkinnes roughe on oure backe, for that we lav fivil in winter, and beaped bnder the earth, goeth to eate of fenell, the whyche eanleth be to cast that our so olde farnne, And then afterward feing oure fraht by minished, we ronne againe to beale be with the fame thing. Haue not al the little Lyardes, one certaine berbe that helpeth them, when they have benne bitten by any of vs. Kunne not the barts whe they are wounded onto Dittaunder: And whe they perceaue them selves bytten by the Dhalange the which is a kynd of a benemous (ppder) ran they not, all beale them felues with eatinge of crabbes or craus thes : The swalowes when they see the epes of their pounge burt, can not al thep belve them with celibonye : The Tato flees being they not our bytinges with bomlocker

be

to

111

tı

f

1

1

L

1

The fecond Bealoane.

elle me bendocke? The wesell when the goeth to fraht with the ratte, both the not frak make her felfe ftronge and lufty with eating of rue belpeth not the Stocke ber in firmities with organie ? And the wolde frome with Jule: Doth not the Elephant befend him from the benun of the Cama leont with olive leaves: And beares from the benim of the Mandzake with puller mearle ! The flocke Doues, the Bevs, the blacke byzdes, and the partriges, boo not they purge their superfluities, with the leaves of bave-And the tame victions. the Turtle, and the bennes, with chickes wede. The cattes and donges when they fele their bealy onercharged, ronne they not to pourge them felues with eatinge of graffe wet with dewe? But what ne beth that I tell thee any longer frozvetake what kinde of beaft thou wilt, and thou thalte funde, that for thinfirmitie, where bnto the fame is subjecte, nature bathe taught him the remedy. And not onelve to the kunde alone (as 3 baue tolde thee) but to eucry one of them feuerally Deup. bed, where it followeth that we have no nebe

ur (kinbat me berthe whyche kynne, aht dus ale bs be little elpeth ten by ē thep d whé bo the bene, them

raup

e the

thep

otto

upth

cker

s femetb

poll not

8 . 18ut

dnakes,

ounce of

nebe to bre labour one of another, neither toa baue weany nobe to put our felues under boutfuil thinges. And that that is worle. to pape one who may often times acue bs our death, as you poore wretches do. And both it not feme buto you, that how much the more monve you gene, to your Philltions so much the better to bo : And goo you not choling out the favzelt mony that pou can fonde : Hi. Herein we bo not al after one falbion. But what wilt thous are ther not foles also found among vous Sma. Do Willes, and print this well in the beart, that there is no beaft at all, that lacketh of the knowledge, apperteuwnge unto his kinde, Although Cometunes one map be found some what more caspe to be taught, or forme what more ware then an other. But I prave thee tell me a little. pf al the fooles amongelt you, buld were a whote sauve on their heddes, should von not feme a faire flocke of gele: Vii. But the matter is , whether thep that thou callest foles, be wifer then thothers. mot . For Fremember that one who mas · 46 91877

a tr

cap

tha

bo

to

gh

the

ar

fat

100

111

th

3

bı

H

n a

C

P

# The second Pralogue.

neither was beled of that discase, being asked by bnder a woman, what philicke he had bled, bp. worle, france the would heale a childe of hers, faid cue us that he woulde not teache it her, thono. And konge be fould do to great an inturpe to heale one of fuch a bifeale, for be thous abt that be had never a pleasaunter tome then whiles be was taken for a fole. Sua. And wherof thinkelt thou that this came fauing that in that tome whiles he was boide of those thoughtes, the which cause man to be euill contented, be knowe not the misery of the nature of man. Vli. I will not dispute with thee hereof now but let bs retourne to our former matter wher I telthe althout you have leffe ficknesse then we, this is because you are of Charter lufe then we, the which is no finall euell, noz no late infelicitie. Sna. Be peraduenture buto be that are proupled be nature, of all those thinges that are necellary for be, and that lyne alwayes in belth; withoute any forowe or griefe at all ( Do that to bye also is little griefe untobe; for we farelee not oure death before 7 18 11 12

much

19hill

nd acc

v that o not

thou?

יווסען:

ell in

that

pnge

one

be to

then

ttle,

Bran

pou

baf

rø,

bo

as

Defore band as you do, and before that toe knowe not so perfectly this to lose the being to be so great a matter. But this great felicitie of punts to line folong is none other thinge buto pou a then a painefull suffering a longer time, with to many troubles and laboures to proferne vour life. And when von have but a griefe in the head, the feare of beath top menteth you so much that the ariese of the mind is farre areater buts you then the pame of the bodic. So that ther have bene many, that for this occasion have fand that your life can not be called a life, but a continuall course and thinkings of beath. Vii. These are but wordes. Sna. As though that there bath not bene among you also of those, who conside ring pour inserie bath sapo it bad bene better never to have bene borne. And of those that are borne-they may onely he called happie, that die in they Awading bandes. And how many baue there also bene, who confideringe pour fate, to make thefelnes free of formany ends baue killed the sclues with their owne handese A thina

A

aí

DL

be

hi

Sa

£

l H

te

Pitt

th

th

ы

8

81

tt

Ħ

P

t

A thing fo wicked that it never comments only in the thoughte of anve of us. Vb. De fome weake harted perfon, who being afeard for that he knoweth not home to ouercome fome contrarve fortune, 02 to beare out forme cuell that is chauced onto bom, but for one of these thou shalt finds thoulandes . that woulde not bye . Sme. De but thou knowest not the cause. Vil. With what is it tell it me I prave thee. Sna. The fearinge to go into a worler State, for the feare that many have put you in, by writinge of the kingchome of Pluto, wher fo many tharpe punishmens tes are prepared for fuch of you as hath valled the marke of reason, a lyttle to las tiffie formetyme his defires, on the whiche thonge we never thinke. But of men thoughte to ende their life, and their trous bles at one tome , thou fouldeft fee thinges that would make thee maruell, there are so manye mo of those amonge you that namfully luffer, and are in cuill cale then thate that iave and be in good cale. Vli. Agefimus, I fee thou art fo obstinate. that thou will never be bable to vercevue realons C.i.

s that

to lofe

r. 25ut

fo long

then a

- with

10 D20

ne but

th to

icfe of

u then

r haue

baue

a life,

kinge

macs.

t bene

mlide

bene

Inb of

do he

pinio

e alfo

a.m

bauc

ndcst

thung

reason: toberfore I will dispute no more worth thee, and chiefely because 3 baue fene in this laste, that thou haste altoger ther lost the knowledge, begenning to boubte of religion, thonges even conve npente to a beafte as thou arte. And truly am not a little forve for thee, pet for the tone I beare buto thee for that thou art a Gretian, of thou wilte become manne agapue, I will cause the so to do, for Try ces hath graunted me fo, and then mapelt thou afterwardes retourne with me into the countree. Sna. Bo not 3, for 3 prave bom to kepe me from that, that map for ener. Vli. Seeft thou not what an bne happy fate thine is: and a beaft of whom menne make little of? Sna. And this is the thing that I derely love: for the much making of, that men make buto beaftes, is all for they owne profettes, and to be ferued in their nedes by them. Vis. 13es Moes this thou consumest the greter part of thy lyfe buhappely and buder the earth without anpe pleasure. Sna. And pou Geape the halfe of vours, and farre moze unquietlyc then we . Vli . Then what pleasures

Die

bu

Dati

da

of

th

COI

an

m

ít i

Ap

in

fc:

D

w

ot

w

CO

fe

th

n

b

3

CI

n

t

C

pleasures hast thousthou eatest nothringe but earthe, or some foule beatt, and thou bunkeft nothing but water. Sna. What matter is this of I have no before of any other thringe ! Vli. Thou hat the knowledge also imperfecte, and thes commeth because the parte imaginative, and fantalle, are confused. Sna. what knowest thou hereof? vli. 3 See it by experience, for all you beattes that finde with the body on the grounde, flage inge the former parte of you worth your feales, and afterwarde pluckinge and beatoing after the hinder part, when the wave croketh bnto you, you go bnto an other place. And you retourne not by the way that you first went . And of whence commeth this, but that you have a confufed fantalic, and fuch a remembraunce as the five also hath, wherev you determine no moze bnto one place, the bnto an other but are guvded by chaunce: Sna. In dede I thould baue a confused fantalie to become manne againe : for 3 thould contis nually be full of humoures and of bayne thoughtes, wher as after thes forte I live contented, and worthoute anne thought

UMI

moze

baue

dtoge

ing to

onuc

trulp

for the

arta

tanne

Im

tapelt

e into

prape

ap for

tone

mode

dis is

nuch

ftes.

to be

15es

part

arth

pou

TOZE

phat

urcs

eremene alle auch alle duodi F on R. la ta braunce to be willing to retourne into a fate, full of fo many troubles and mole rves. So that labor no more Mivffes . for I will none of this the fauor, for it well but me bnder a thouland infirmities, and 4 (hould never be able to entoy one befire affuredive, but rather for enerve luttle furfette. I should feele a thousande for romes: And that i is worle, I thould have nede to kepe my felfe from beath . being subjecte to incominge me and to loue euer after invibaven and ficke. So that do on the wave, for I will go to rubbe my scales a lytle on vonder ainever because I mape moue it the easelier, where I shall fele to much pleasure and belite that perchaunce I never proved the loke bema man, for that it shalbe without respecte or any displeasure at all, wheras poures are ever mingled with fuch bytternes. that manye of you, speakings thereof baue larde, a thoulande pleasures were not worthe one trouble or tormente. Vli. In thende I have to do with benfles. And although Circes gene them vower

to

m

th

te

13

ti

#### The fecomo Dialoge

to speake and aunswere me, pet (as me thinketh) she hath not geven them their wittes, for they consider onely certagne of the least thinges, and not that that importeth. But yet I will not leve so sayze an enterpuse, for I will retourne but a Circes, that she may cause me to speake to the rest that are here, to bo good but o those that are better able to perceive. For as the proverbe sayeth: evel may be done to one by sorre, but good never.

UMI

emem

untoa

mole

es, for

e Delire

luttle

ide for

b haue

being

o loue

bat ao

be my ecause of spatial strains of the spatial spatial strains of the spatial strains of the spatial spatial strains of the spatial spatia

Wlittes, Cyrces, the Pare.

# 3 knewe not howe

thou bearest me most noble Cyces, I should boubt in dede that thou wouldest not graunte me the fauour that I have as ked of thee. And thou not willing to denye it me, hast onely caused me to speake with such as thou knowest had there mud so determined, not to become men againe, that any man could never personale them, and so I must leve them.

men againe, that any man could never persuade them, and so I might leve them terpisse. Cir. Let never any such thought enter into thy minde of me Alusses. In this apperteneth neither to the lous that I beare thee, not yet to the might ness and noblenes of my mynd, ever geven to most glosious enterpisses: for thou knows well wel, that he, who can not sopheare plessures, can not also bo them. The Ahou ball caused me to speake with one, who is more oblimate then those others. And

where

w

ag

bo

th

fo

u

w

w

th

ni

L

tl

n

tı

b

1

t

1

1

1

wheras I thought to bo bim a good forne. m making bim returne man, e lebing bim againe into his countrie, his obstinacie blundeth him fo much, o he faith he thould bo farre worle to chaunge that state with Cir. Of thou Alviles haddeltale fo proned they fate, thou wouldest perad uenture do the lyke. Vli. This fellowe whiles be was man faith be was a philitio who as thou knowest, never see any other thing then hurtes, gricles, futbunes, ticke nelles of men, they never here any other thing then lamentations, and wepinges, wherof be now remembring bim felf. (because the enil is cuer better kept in mond. then the good) he wil not 3 think become managame. Cir. In al fates of men the troubles & miscries are many mo, then the contentations, and felicities. Vli. Then hab that our wife man done il, if it wer fo. who among other thinges, for the which be gave davly thankes unto the goodes. thanked them, for that they bad made bim man, e not a beaft. Cir. De did fo, because such is thoppinion of the greater part of men,led by those reasonnes, that mave he C.III.

luces. loue times en to know thou to thou to the find the first th

boine

re that e most

Chould

t thou

aunte

bat 3

pillina

me to

ecome

neuer

then

thous

be gathered by reasonable discourse. But more credite should be genen unto those who having prouch the one life and the other, know it by experience, and by the sensitive knowledge, the whiche passeth not encly and excedeth all others in assurednes, but is also the beginninge and foundation of all. Vii. Pea, but the life of beastes shuld not be compared to ours, for that it is much more unversecte.

Cir. I beleue not this: for I fee many beattes, that have them fences farre more verfecte then you and that in operation of them, passe you very farre. Vli. De truly they palle be in some perticuler sence, as for erample, the Cale in feing, the Dogge in finelling, and the Gofe in bearinge: but they are then to farre inferior buto be m wogement of fentible thmacs, because they baue not the common fence so pers fect as we and that they lacke altogether the reasonable discourse, and ablenes in comparing one sence with an other, for our fenfitue knowledges are farre perfec ter then theirs. But cause me to weaks buth some other, so I thinke not that all

The thirde Prainge.

all have to loft the true knowledge of ro forme, as thefe three bane, to whom ? have fooken, whom truly thou haft not chaunged into fuch an unperfect kinhe of beattes, without a caule, lins they loke men have lo unperfect a viscourse. Cir. am contented thou thalt freake with ponder Barc. that thou feelt feadinge at the shadowe of vonder Die: Go thither and call him, for I have graunted him to Speake. Vli. Bare (as God gene thee that that thou befored) runne not away. but tary me and withfafe to answer me. for Cyrces bath told me, that thou canff to bo. Ha. Alas, what meaneth thise Thane agavne the bibcritanding of the fignification of the speache of man: Db mp buhappy chaunce, who hafte thou brought me agavne into suche miseries Callest thou it then muserie to bus Derstande the speache of mane Ha. 9900 fery, and molte great infelicatie, of they have not chaunged thep; nature, fonce the trine that I was a man. And what is the occasion Bare?

C. Hare

e. But

to those

and the

by the

paffeth

n affu-

ge and the life

ours,

emoze

ration

etruly nce, as

Dogae

ringe:

to be

pers

etber

es in

erfec

eake

that

all

te. many

Alas, whiles I was man, I no ner hearde other then lamentyng and forowinge most bitterive one with ano-Vli. Surely, 3 baue auopoco one mischiefe, and am runne into ano ther. Thother was a philinon, wherep be never practifed but the ficke, and enill contented persons : and this by as much as 3 can perceine, fould never baue vzac tiled but with desperates. Ha. Thefe thinges were often buto me occasion of fuch forowe, that I would farre rather baue aboven in a wood, where I should never baue scene the steppes of men-and trucky I would have done it, of the nature of man could have borneit. But thou knowest that man bath note of so many thinges, that he can not live alone, but with a thousand incommobities. And bott thou beare no beatt also lament? Ha. It is true: for when those of mine owne kynd baue any griefe, 3 knowe it Areight by the vovce: for it is naturall to enery beatt, to the we with the varietic of the found of his voice, whether de be mery a feep. But thele furb naturall borces Dewe

th

th

ca

m

fv

R

m

n

t

b

D

6

t

thewe me onely they? griefe in generally the whiche kinds of forowings, is farre caffer to be borne, then the forowinge of man inho, belides the lamentyng with frattes and malincolie, and forowfull accentes, increaseth with shewinge his mpferies, and the occasion of his griefe. muche moze the compation, bery ofte to them that heare it. Alas, I never heard befodes the fightes that hee naturally caffeth , that is malincolic) other thinge spoken of, then manslaughters, treason, theftes, robberies, and so cruell wie kebnes, that one man bid to another, that moofte often trines the compassion of others troubled me moze, then the vitie of my felfe. Vli. Tel meaf it pleafe thee) what state was thone, whiles thou lone belt man? Ha. I chaunged fo many. that 3 can not tell which to tell the. But what moueth the fo to before to knows what my frate was: Vli. The lone that one naturallye beareth buto those that are of his Countrey, and thes bath caused me to before of Cyces, to reflore buto all new Crotians, the thave

T ne

to for

ano

משמעו

ano

erbo

euill

mcb

DIAC

bele

to!

ber

ulb

Inb

180

00

TP

ut

t

E

it

0

r

'n

have of man. And for that I buderfrom by ber that thou were one of them, 3 fronto bo the this pleasure: because 3 allo am a Gretian and am called Willes. He. To me thou thatt not reftoze it,if 3 be not enforted therebuto. Vli. Wilho for Is it not better to be a man, then a boute beafter Ha. Bo.for any thing that T Vi. And art thou then btter knome. ly betermined, that thou wilte confume the life in this body of a beatle Ha. That I am: for liung thus a beatt, I lius contented and quiet in my kynde: where as being man, I was never contented m any fate. Vli. But the matter is livbe ther this were through thine owne faute. or not and for that thou were to bulatias ble-that thou couldest not content the self with that that was reasonables Ha. 3 thould be in doubte bereof, fauinge for that I never founde any man, in what effate fo ener it were (and vet 3 practife) prough)that was pericetly contented. But fell me 3 pay thee: what thing bath manne, that thoulde cause him to lyus

contented: for cyther he is putte by for

tune

tune in State where he bath to commann and to prouple for others; or els be is come maunded , and ruled by others. Vii . In both these fates(of be be wife) be may be contented. Ha. Pay rather in none. Hoz pf he be a punce, and Lorde, and haue to gouerne others, of be do as be ought to bo, be never bath one bomze of refte, belides the craftes, and deceiptes, that be should alwaies feare-because they daylpe growe, by the enuve that is borne bym. In nowell thou not that a mince bolbeth in his principalitie, the place that the most bigh and mightie & DD bok beth in the whole worlde? With hath with his wiscome to care for all theme ges: Whereby it is commonly lavo, that all his subjectes slepe with the eyes of hom . What pleasure wite thou then that behaue: Vli. Woolke greate pleas fure, feinge theym to loue Civille, and tolone well one another: because hereof befeeth a glozve, and honoure fpzvnge, that maketh bun munostall. Ha. De. but where are these Subuccies. Are then pcr.

UMI

m, 3

ale E

s. Ha.

the for

brute

hat I

fume

That

vbers.

ted m

irbe

aute.

fatia,

liad g

e for

what

tath lvue

f024

une

D.

perchaunce loke us beattes, inho folding that thing only, inberunto nature inde neth bs. Seeft thou not, that by this nes wor being contented, that man bath by na ture(as 3 thinke) fo many tumultes, fo many craftes, and to many ill workes springe, that thou canst fond no realme at al. where there are not fo great hatrebs that it should be better to live in a most fbarve and abandaned defert, and amon. aest the most cruell beastes that may be found, the m what wel governed realme feener it be amongest menne. Mi. Sap not fo, for a good Prince canne kepe bus people buder the lawes in fuch forte that these troubles that thou speakeste of, take little place there . Ha . And howe may this be done buto lo peruerle a nature as mans is but with mothe arenous savnes and with fo critell punylyments. for the fearinge of ill boers, that they gene perchannce no leffe griefe to the ges uer of them , then to them that fuffer the: pf pou be not crueller then we be, who bare not offenbe one an other of babeing OL,

a

it

fp

01

b

fe

to

tt

221

of

**\***1

th

171

of one kinde, not vet to burte those of an other kinde, of the be not coltrained there buto by bunger, or that we bo it, for fome gelotie, 02 fome feare, 02 for our owne lauegarde. Vii. Truelpe it canne not be benied, that in the places of bigbett aucthoritie, there are not manve mo thoughtes, and troubles, then pleafures. And chiefely in those who love the lafe garbe of their subjectes in suche sorte as apperteineth. But let bs let this palle, for it chaunfeth to felve to be a Wince, let be speake of a primate verson, who bath none other to thinke on then bim felfe and bus boulebold. Ha. Dfa papuate person chaufeth the like: for evther be is ruche, or be is poore: amongelt the riche thinke not to funde any contented, for the nature of roches is, to bung lo great feare for the keping therm, that the pollelloures of them, have never one only howe, a quiet unpnde. And one while they are in feare of warres, or of other milfortunes y tyme the worlde bringeth, nowe they boute of there would and noise of their children. nowe they feare their fernanntes.

And

42

dine

de

nes

pna

5 . Co

ikes

ilme

rebs

Don

e mon

w be

ulme

BED

bus

that

of.

salo

BM F

mons

nts.

thev

ge=

the

who

eina

OL,

And finally gold bath fo many energyes, that who that hath thero!, stanoeth ever in doute. Of he be poze I wil fap nothing to the thereof, fins there is nothing on earth more barbe to luffer then pouertpe, Vi.3 will not vet berein beleue thee al together, because I have beard say, that manne of our wife men , baue mailed it and loved it much . And there have ben of those who to be the more frely able to plai the philosophers, baue despited and catte ryches awaye. Ha. The greater parte of them, and perchaunfe all, have bone it for ambition, and to thintent they woulde be accounted gret and rare, among men. And there are also of those, that have cast awave an ounce of golde, to get a pound thereofagame. For the common people have ever this cultome, that when ther le one dispose a thong, then they gave it hom willingloc. Vli. Then I fee thou inplt have those owne wordes, I tel the. that I haus lene many, that have lyued in pouertie most contented, and with most great guyetnes of mind, and chiefely fuch as were wife, He. And I tell thee, that

1

1

1

t

Í

t

ţ

they have fained it, doing like wife mem because they wold not have both fortune and the world, laugh at them at once. But rather I wit fav more buto the here of that by bow much the more one is of knowledge by fo much the more his arcfe is to be vooze. Vli. And what is the reafon hereof : Ha. The confidering the inconce that fortune bath bone hom in making biat pote and an infinite numbed of fooles riche. Vli. Thou caufeff me noin to remember a faving of a frende of mine that farbe, that goodes but most common ly lyke the rume, who falleth curr in the wekest place. Ha. The bistaine also that they bave, to menteth them continue ally leing that of that that nature bath made for al men for the fould do against ber order, of the brought not fufficientive forth for all men of that, that they neted) there aduatmieth io muche onto one that be maketh banocke thereof, and buto an other there lacketh. And thus commeth ancipalecause be who can bo most , well take most. Wilber as amongest be it is not fo:because mone despreth ; or can vollette often in f.L.

ti:di

TUES.

euer

bing

reon

rtpe.

ee al

that

ed it

en of

plai

STEE

etre

neit

adine

nen.

caff

und

ople

ep le

ue it

thou

the.

ed in

note

**fuch** 

bee,

that

any thinge that nature bath made for bemore then an other. Vli. Thou mouls best then make good the opinion of those that fave that it is not ill bone to rabbe. because the goodes of this worke . bathe bon fo many tomes follen . that the true maifters therof, baue them no moze, but let bun that can get them take them.

Ha. This onely is fufficient for thee Mife fes, that poucette is a thing fo fharpe and beave, that menne to five it abase them felues even to become fervantes one with an other, the whoche is a thinge to foule, that among be beaftes there is none fo byle, that would not rather fuffre beath then to put hom felfe wollongly to ferue an other of his owne kynd, to amende bis necessaries. But nature bath loued be so much better then the bath done von . for: amongest be this infelicitie is not knowe but rather every one of bs, bath ben made by ber of fuch baloz, that he can rule bom! Celte. Vli. Det there muft be fome other thing then pouertie that causeth men to become fernauntes one with an other fo z many that are riche are fene to bo that.

He. Rather they are moze pooze then thos thers

the

the

of

fra

fck

Del

res

to

m

for

m

fol

be

A

111

m

of

th

te

T

201

D

te

11 ti

t

thers, of you well confider it, because they are poore of noblenes of barte, or els of counsell: by the which they can not refraine their briuft belyze, whereby they fcke to get a name or aucthoritie or mmo deratelye to fatilify their couetous defue res.by makong theom felues feruguntes to others . Pli . And be that mere in & meane fate, in the which be mought regfonablve contente bim felfe, Ha. And inhere is thus fate: 3 for my parte neuer found any man, who fait not, that evther be lacked something, or p be bad to much. Although thefe were most fewe, who remembred it when they fawe them felues moust thenbe of their life, lamentong the of the paines that they babbe fuffered m they wouth to gette goodes, to baue as termarne monabe at they? death.

Vii. These are fautes that growe, for the man can not refrapne, and measure his despres, and not of his owne proper nature. He. It seemeth to me alone, sins nature bath ordeined, that he may despre those thought onto him. The which thing

F.4. 60

02 bs.

boul-

I those

cobbe,

bathe

etrue

. but

Allie

e and

them

with

bule,

ne lo beath

lerue!

e bis

bs fo

Fo:

towé

made

bom.

other

en to

r,foz

at.

thos

bers

#### The there Dislogue.

for that the lourd as better, the bath not Done to bs . And I remember that in that age, in the which I began to have some knowledge, my father who was a great gentio man of Otholia , and endued moth great epches, putting me bider the ke ppinge of a mapfter, who taught me cers taine thinges of the mathematicals (after the cultome of the Oretians) & beganns to confider, that man knewe nothinge. ercepte be were taught it . The inbuche thong in that age fenicth bery harbe , not fo much for the difficultie of thinges , and farthe keping buter of the maifter, as for the childibe delizes, that the fame some bangeth with it : fax 3 - love burpe end contented and vet 3 lacked nothing This Df thus age there thous be buttle hede taken, because it is mold miner fecte, Then following farther the beath of my father chaunced, whereby a began to Arvue working bethen for the inher ritaunce, alwayes trufting whiles 3 was in these transiles, that when they were ended, I thould lyue contented a m malte

qt

m

w

te

pa

3

m

bo

ch

£

th

m

th

to

tr

t

u

tr

0

0

D

0

ti

quiet reft: but it came all contrary buto me. for as I had my part wherof part was possessions, and part money, thoughtes increased. And being bled to be go uerned, me thought it then most great varnes to do the fame my felfe-and others I trufted not. For being enforced for the maintening of my lubliaunce, to practile both with husbantmen, and with mas chauntes. I perceived that ecke of them. for continually watchinge; to make that that was mine his: for to tet a farme unto a bufbandmand is methinge elles then to be partener with a thiefe. And to put the goodes unto a marchaunt to trade with one that thinkerh to beceive thee of them. And notwithstanding, A marked that neither of them was contented with his frate, and they bid never other then lamente continually the one of the earth that pelded not, for the entil disposition of the wether, and of the little estimation they were hab in . And the other of eudl wendes, of ill fortune, of the small safety of the sea, and of the difcord of Poinces, that letteth the erereife #.III.

bnot

that

forme

areat

moth

e ke

e cet4

after

anne

mge,

pehe

, not

dna

r, as

fame

ping

pttle

fecte.

cath

caan

inbe

inas

were

nofte

quiet

of marchannople. Vli. Querve bodge muste have something to trouble hom, even you also have some thinges y trous ble pou. Ha. De but for enery one that ive have, you have a thouland. But heare the reste a spttle, in thus meane seasonne, bothe for the necessities that channee to the lyfe of man, and for to defend me that mine owne were not taken from me (for all men are theues, but their meanes of robbing are byuerle) I babbe to wactvle with an infinite number of craftes men. of men of laive, and procters, and be thou affured that I never founde anye one of thole craftelmen that lived contented: for all they holding their eyes on the riche. lamente that they must get their breade. And amonge those other advocates, and men of lawe they complained of the like, for all they lamented dayly, that had to Ariue and contende, to procure them the thonges that were necessarye to the lyfe of manne. Pli. Wiholoener hath to bo with the, that some repent it: but it is little trouble to the alwaies to strue for other mennes goodes. Ha, He that froubleth others

ge

bo

mi

151

on

iti

m

ph

mu

th

MU

fa

AI

of

th

qu

Re

fel

CO

al

to

म्र

m

O

others refleth not in quiet bim felfe. Thou considerest not also the hatred thep. get thereby, and how much they areabe borred, when they are not neved, and in what fort they are taken. Vli. is bery true, that I remember, disputinge once in one of our bniverlities of Grecis. it was in question who should goo before in the fraft place, evther men of lawe, 02 philitions, and it was concluded that the man of lawe thould go before, onely by this erample, that when erccution is commaunded to be bone, the thefe goeth bes fore, and the bangeman cometh after. Ha, And when I fawe the cuill contentation of all these states, and desiring to audide the same, I thought that if I thould fond quietnes in any state, it should be in the Late of our pricites, who taking them selves from the world, abide in those their congregations to ferue the gods, holding all in common, and fuffering them felues to be ruled by one of they? owne fort. And lo faltening inv felfe to this, 3 beter munco to leave the world, and to go live in one of those congregations. The which A.uu. purpole

UMI

eddor

bym.

trous

that

beare

mne.

ice to

that

e (for

res of

ctple

men.

thou

neof

o: faz

iche.

eabe.

and,

like.

ad to

n the

lpfe

00 0

little

other

bletb

bers

#### The thirde Plalogue.

purpole 3 cold not long observe, for event as 4 began to lene a litle bonto the, 3 finele the favours of their discordes, and infelice ties and how every one of them, felling by al meanes (although buinft) to be thief, be traied & burted thothers. 3 perceinevails the difpleasures that thei toke for that thei had to kepe those obediences to mainteine them bniversalive in the estimation of goodnes, the which buildeth them where with to live: the trouble also and werps nes that the factting in is onto them, the parkes they take to persuade men that ther are more frendes of the goddes, their ther who ferued the worlde, with those lawes onely that God and nature have genen bs. So that I fled to farre with imp mond from them, that I never temens bred them more. Then I thought to live the a gentleman, attending to beaneries, and pallinge the time in hawkinge and huntinge, and in suche like pleasures. Vii. If thou fought this state to have found quietnes there, 3 can tell thee, that thou wentest farre out of the way, and much more also in feates of artics. F.O

r

1

For in these two lines, the which I my felfe have proved, I know very wel, ther is none that lyneth contented. He. For that I thought I should fonde no quiet. nes in warre, 4 would not brougit. And belides this, I thought it a folithnes, not fighting for ones country, or for his ho nestre, or for some other lawfull cause to fell has owne late for anye kande of her. For fins we have but once to come into this worlde, me thinketh that alimnche gold as ever nature made, of that make, could not pave for the lyfe of one man. Then also persevuing that to line lyke a gentleman, there neded a multitube of fer nauntes, who are all our enemies, and bavly do thinges whereby a thoularide dipleasures grow buto bs, thinking it a most harde thinge to finde contentation there, I chaunged my mund from that bolely. And finally thinking in feruing a Prince, not in bando craftes, but in bo notable affances to fond fome contentas tion of mond, 3 determined with the los tle lerning 3 bad, to fetle me to that prace F.b.

UMI

ettert

Anele

felice

ng by.

dails

t thei

teine

n of

ohera

erps

t,the

that

therr

thole

haue

himp

temu

line

Ples.

and

CB.

haue bee.

vav.

ries.

tyle, inher, by and by I found the contrain rie of that that I thought. For belives the paines that it is to ferue a Prince, and the troubles that in fuche fernice are fuffered, not being able evtber to fleve or eate in due feafon, the which are even thinges that preferue our life, the enup f reigneth m courtes and thunkindnes that femeth to be in princes towardes those that serve them, (who thinke themselves never inft. ly rewarded) without they would geus them they bole kingdome, luffered me never to reft my mynd, to live one onely boinze contented. Wiberby I was befpes rate and gave my felfe to fayling, and fo there where I thought not, I found my quietnes. For being carried by fortune into this Illand, I was chaunged by Cpp ces as thou feelt, into an bare, the which was as it mought be to pou, to be fallen into a most plesaunt slepe. For although I knowe not fo much as I know when I was a man, fo am 3 not alfo in fo much teare. Fli. Dea, because thou art a beatt that feareth not ? Ha. 3 feare not those of mone owne kinde, as you do, the which

whiche is fufficiente for me . Df other: thonges 3 bane no care, thinkinge that therbuto is no befonce, as you also boo. of the anger of the gobbes. Fli. It is ber rve true, that in al thele frates, thele trou bles are as theu favelt, and parabuenture many mo. But then of the pleasures that be there, thou talkest nothing at all. He. And what pleasures baue men, in what state soener it be, that the griefe that ther barnge at thenoc, is not greater then the pleasure is nowest thou not that our moolt auncient Greke Doete fapte : that the pleasure of this incide inas not the true pleasure, but was forome, c'othed in pleasures garmentes : Vi . Howe the web be this: Ha. He favde, that when the pellel that Mandoza brought on crth, was opened, whereby all the myschiefes and humaine invicries wente foothe. that then pleasure wente forth also . And coinge abrobe in the worlde, he beganne by meanes to waive men buto hour, wbo beganne to folowe hun in suche sorte, that none wente any more to beanen.

inheree.

the

the

eD.

in

res

eth

eth

rue

ıft.

eus

me

elp

De

ماه

mp

ine

120

rich

len

lab

En

ucb

aft

not

the

dan

Wherfore Jupiter thought to take him from the earth and to bung him agains into beauen : and therbyon fent the nine mules for him, who with they melodie done bim againe into beauen, causong him pet before, to leave his apparell on earth, because into beauen ther goeth but pure thinges and dispovled from all cos rupt beckinges. Sozowe in this meane leason, berng bunted from euery man, wanding absode in the worlde, founde this apparell: and thinking that if he dothed him felfe therm, he thould not fo be winen away, and not berng knowen, be put it on his backe. And fo ever after be bath cone about the world, clothed in pleafures apparell, beceauing men consumally. Vi. What ment he by this? Ha. That all thinges that men toke for pleasure, brong them sozowe. And this is that the pleasures of the world. are none other thing then forowes, dothed and covered with a very lotte belote, wherby men being deceauch, endenoure them felues to feke them, and fond there afterwarde in the end, more forowe, then belite.

I

-

t

116

belyte. And I woll tell thee of one onlye. that men put among pleasures, because it is common to every frate, and that is plave: the mbiche is nothing elle in Debe. then forome it felf, and is taken not with Standynge for the pleasure of men. Vli. Thou wouldest peraduenture lav, the le fond, and not place. Fo 2 as it is common ly larde: it is not ill to plave, but it is pli to lofe. Ha. Both the one and thother are vil. although that to lofe be the morfe. For al those thunges that trouble the qui etnes of the minde, are of them felues nought. The wonninge, although it seme to baue in it felfe a certaine little of good nes, because it is of it selfe profitable : pet it altereth the mondes of men in such fort. that it capleth them bery often times to og many thonges worthy of reprehension. And although it be sometimes a certavne morthe unto one, the morth truelve is never good, pfit come not of that that is good. Winninge befodes this, caus feth manye bunzofitable and bayne era penfes. And bereof it commeth, that he who foloweth playe, impourrytheth hym felfe

m

ne

ne

nie

na

m

ut

020

ne

n,

be

he

fo

n,

be

m

n

يو

ke

ıD

D.

0

2

27

rè

n

ę,

felfe at thende: For thoughe one wonne as muche monp, as he lad loft at another tyme, vet maketh be not at all tymes, the toke full famme . And thus all they that ble it, bo pll. Vli. I allow not this cpis mion: for I baue fene many that baue nothonac, loue thereby. Ha. Dea, when they have bestolved thereat, all that they habbe: for plave properly both as the mie both, who cleanwinge fafte to a good wall, never resteth butill be have brought it to ruvne, and then when it is even fallurge, he holdeth it up. So lykewple plane, when it fastneth on one that bath ought, it both fe that it bindoeth hom, and after when be bath no moze, it fulfarneth brm . Foz practilinge where there is play, fawning and flatterpage bom that wonneth, be pycketh oute a lyupnge mootte bylcipe there, the best wave be mave. But beleue me Elliss: plave is one of the greatest infcliaties, that is genen buto the miffo24 tune of manne. And perchannce this wice ked cursed plague, bath not takenne all the worlde in suche sorte, that the greates

ti

0

Ín

171

211

th

of

th

th

of

to

fpt

m

greater parte of men , fettinge aparte all landable and boneft enterpaples, doo no thong els but plave . And there are some inho browne them felues therein, a there lofe the loght of reason in such wose, that they forgette their honestie, they owne helth, thev; goodes, thev; wofe, their chil men, their frends, and finally their own felucs, and confumping therein the thons ges recellary for their lyuing, bring thein felucs into fo thamefull a poucrtie, that they five the fight of men, more then we the frant of dogges, and chiefely the frant of those that knew the, when they were in better Cate: and vet they never ccafe to pmagine, howe they may get any lyttle monve, to go plave it, and rather fuffer the want of thinges that they have nobe of. Therefore marke Tliffes the pleafurs that me haue. Some they not onto the ras ther to be folowes: Vli. Bare, all are not of this lost, and man is no more enforced to this thouge then to another. And be spaces thus, he mave by his wisedome rea medy al that, that cauleth bis displeasure. Da.

UMI

RE

Er

the

bat

pls

no

rise

EP

nie

ill,

æ,

rest

oth

FOR

ng

be.

ive

ME

133°

ne

the

tes

Ha. De but howe hardelve, fonce all the world is to corrupt and noughte : So that perfivate me no more to chaunge this beinge with poures: for I will not retourne out of a ftate wherin I never founde any thoughte at all to go into an other where I never was contented and wher I shall fee that thinge that nature bath make commune for enery bodye, to be taken from me by hom that mave bo more then I, whereby I must by force become bys feruaunte, and must recepue for her of un fernice, that thing mgarblee, that nature hath frely genen me : and where all those delutes that I take, must at the ende barnge me forowe. Pli. I will not that thou weake to obstinately. Seeft thou not bowe byle a beaft thou arter and of fo little knowledge, that thou knowest not whe ther thou be male or female. Ha. Pav pou knowe it not, that thinke to know al thinges foo well, but we knowe it well prough. Vli. Thou balt feare of everye thonge and haft trust onely in running away, and vet art thou afterwardes taken by many kyndes of beaftes.

And

And what is that to me, pf mp kinde be of that nature: Vii. Thou art of to little lofe. that every most finale burte, kplleth thee. Ha. Alas no moze I mave thee, for thou wouldest so bo, that A should thinks it most miserable. Wiberas for not know. mae fo many thinges as you bo, 3 thinke it most happye. But go seke to bece this benefut to fome others, for 3 for my parte well none of it, and following mine owne nature wythout any thoughte, I will go febe me on ponder faire grene graffe that thou feeste on ponder hyll. Vli. Hare, me thinketh thou docft loke hom, who beinge put into prison by certapne bus creditours, prayed the they would not take hom out from thence, lapinge: that out of paylon be had a thoulande thoughtes, both for him felfe, and for others, and there being provided for, by fuch as were mont to prouple, be had not one thought in the world: so that he thoughte it a good lve habitation for hom, and thes came all of the weakenes of hos monde. For pf be bab bene a man in Debe, he woulde rather O.i. baus

UMI

ull the

o that

his be-

ourne

be any where

Mali mabe

taken

e then

ne bus

per of

at ma-

ereall

e ende

ou not fo little

whe

Pap

is wo

i well

uerpe

mona

es ta

and

Ha.

bane bene a poze man abzode, then a rpche man in polon, belyinge manfullye with bys ippledome all that he lapde . Soo allo thou by almuch as I can percepue by thy morbes , Chouldelt be fo infatiable a man. and foulded to much esteme every lytle trouble because thou couldest not boldely thewe the face against those dipleasures that the worlde and fortune bringe, that thou wplte rather remapne in that bple Rate of a beafte, then to retourne man. And knowvnge thee lo, 3 wpl even fuffer thee fo to remaine : for in bounge others tuple, I thoulde do that that thoulde dof plefe the although it were for the profet, and that (boulde rather bypnge thame to oure konde then bonoz, as all those other men do that are loke to thee. Ha. 3 woulde aunsuere thes the descoure will fes, but lyke as we can not cate more then our nede requireth, bevng deterned from it by our owne nature: lo are we also enforced when we have neade thereof, and bane conveniente feedpinge nyghe bs.

And therfore lyns 3 have fene the graffe ponder

The fourth Dialoge.

ponder on the fayte byll agaynste bs, and am hungry, Jaminsocco to leve thee.

## The fourth Dialoge.

Aliffes, Circes, the Gote.



Have alwayes thought most noble Circes, that there was a difference betwene one man, and an other: as it is daylys sayd by proverbe, by the mouthes of our Grety.

pcbe

with

also the

nan, Iptle

idely

that

pple

nan.

affer

there

DOG

fot.

te to

ther

alic

then

rom

en

and

affe

Der

of the felte same opinion, and thys is, for that I know plainely, that his ferefulnes and lyttle cozage, wyll not suffer hym to knowe the truthe. Seelf thou not that he is so weke harted by nature, that he bath so much fere of enery litle adversitie, that he iwoulde rather choose to lyue in energe most byle bondage without thoughts, the in anye bonest degree, with those difficulties that the same bringeth with it.

Cir . Whoe affureth thee bereof: Vli. De hym felfe, whoe wyll rather remains fo a beaft, then retourne man, for the mange troubles, that he thinketh men baue. And pet he confesseth, remaphynge so, to be in fuch bondage to nature, and led by her by force that he is not mayfter of bys owne operations. Telberchy the defize to eatc, commyng on hym whyles we were reasoning together, and seinge certaine graffe, p was coucnient meate for him, be Departed from me with a very ill wil, for that he had not yet auns wered me after bys owne mond, faving that he could not choose but go feede, for so bys nature ens forced

forced hom to do. So that le what a weeke harted manne he was, that would rather loue in a feruitude, and in a loke state, besaule he thoughte there were somewhat fewer displeasures: then to retourne ma, and to be marker of his owne palloons, though he muste somewhat struce with them: as perchaunce thou haft heard fave, howe many there have ben of our Gretis ans, who to anothe fome bondage, or enforcemente, have not onclve not cared to Arrue with the world, and with fortune. but also not to varoon cuen their owne lyucs. Cir. This that thou callelt bons dage in bom, or enforcemente, is unto bom neyther thone nor thother. And whoe for Cir. Bocause hos nature requireth fo. Tell me 3 prave thee, when a frome falleth bowne , both he it by force! Vli. I thynke not . Cir. Therefore he can do none otherwise. Vi. Itis true: but hos nature requeset foo, and that motion that caulethe hum to good towardes the centre, commung of an ins ner power, the which is within the fame, C.ui. called

UMI

for

nes

n to

t be

ath

bat

rpe

the

culs

li.

ine

na

ue.

, to

de

bos

eto

ere

ome

,be

for2

ter

not-

ens

ceb

called nature, muste be naturall to bon. and not violente: because the violente motions are those that come be an outmarke power. And therefore, although be can bo none other wyle: pet it can not be lapo that Cir . He is vet draiven be is enforced. downe by force of bys beaupnes. Vli. Bo. not by force, but by nature, beynge natur rall buto hom to be weightie: for of be wer not so weightpe, be shoulde not bee a Cone. Cir. And fo it is also with the affection of beaftes, when it is led by nature: and therefore it can not be called enforcement, fonce the both alwaies the best for them, as the both in all other thonges: and that that is nede to they, confernation Vis. And were it not and perfection. better for them not to be so gupbed by her. ble to bo there operations more freely: Cir. Do, for that they bane not the knowledge and the bescourse of reas fon. For they thoulde often erre, wheras being gupded by her that can not crre, they never of very feldome fayle. Fli. And what certernive balte thou thereof. Cir. Erperience that I fee baplye, bepnge COTH

0

10

6

11

t

見は

t

0

U

¢

1

b

1

11

の可能はは

connersannte after a certapne sorte, worth al the kyndes of them (fo) of them al, there is some one in thesmone Iselande (where I fee that none eateth moze, then he neas beth of, no, of any thynge that is not fytte for hom, nevther both he anve other oplos ber at all: whereby all they, that tyme that nature bath appopnted theym to lyue, althoughe it be leffe then that that the bath genen to man, lyne in healthe and luffye, the whiche is not so with you. V4. 108 they do no dylozder at all, whereof then conneth it, that they have Moster lyfe then wer Cir. Of the complexion, the why the was not genen by nature to thepm, to temperate as to bs: and by the moplture, lober of the naturall heate is fedde, lober by lyfe is mayntepned: the whiche may Aure was geuen to theym by nature, more waterpihe, and leffe aprpihe, then oures, whereby it is more eafelye corrupt. I speake of the greater parte, for there are some that lyne farre longer then man, as the Barte and the Clephante . Mi . Arte thou then of the opinion, of it is better to be a bent

JMI

o byur,

nte motwarpe

can bo

vo that

aiven

i. 100,

natu

be iver

bee a

itb tbe

p na.

ed env

e best

iges:

ation

tnot

ber,

noze

not

reas

tas

Te,

ege

MIC

a beaft then a man? Cir. I woll not do termine this matter, not thou fouldefte not also thinke, that I belove it: for then I Chould baue changed my felf into a beaft. as I have bone them. But if I thould fap as thou fapelt, our talke were at an ende: it fould well fuffife the, that I had graw ted the to tourne into men agam al thole that woulde. And thoughe thou have not pet chaunsed on ampe that will be not pet aballhed, but leke farther, for thou chalte well proughe fynde some one that well. Vii. I well even door fo: For I thoulde thonke it to muche hame, to have proved this to worthwe an enterprise in vapne. Cir. Bo then and speake with the Boate that thou feelte ponder feedinge: for be alfo(as I well remember) was a Gretian. Vli. Boate, D Bote, barken 3 mape thee, of thou be a Gretian as Circes bath tolde me. Go. A Gretian I was wholes I was man, and my name was Cleomenes of Cointhe :but nowe am I not , new ther pet would I be. Vli. Wihat, arte thou perchaunce albamed of the contruct Go. Pot lo: for there is none perad

uene

Ber

the

tha

ma

fea

the

3

fit

an

m

ar

CO

w

P

tì

t

£

6

55

menture more honorable then that, in all the worlde . Vli . Wihat is that then . that thou wouldefte not . Go . Become man agavne . And of this I have onelve fear. Tlive fo farre better contented thus then I brode wholes I was manne. Vli. I would even have offered the this benefit, thunking to have done thee no small good tourne, to reftoze thee, the figure of man and to take the out of this bondage. and to leade thee against thine owne countrey. Go. I thanke the of thy good well towardes me: but if this should have pen to me at woulde followe otherwise then thou thoukest. Vii. Telboc, what is the cause Cleomenes: I have ever barb Av by vour wife men of Gretia, that man is the most verfecte & most noble creature that is in all the world . De, rather be is in certaine tople, the ende & lord of al others. Go. Eruely they bid also lyke toyle men to far fo: for one thould ever pravie his own. and fav that that a man knoweth. V. And therefore what state is thine and what felicitie haft thou, that thou wilte rather hue thus a beatte, then to retourne mans Ø.b. Go.

UMI

of bo

Defte

en 3

eaft.

d fav

mbe:

rair

inole

not

t vet

alte

pll.

ulde

ued

one.

oate

2 be

an.

bee.

olde

ER

nes

repr

urte

Set.

esse

Go. 1013 Could recken the commodities to the that we beafter baue, thou woldest not thinke them comodities, not pet euer Sholdest thou be able to buderstande them. even alfo as vou can not comprehende the felicitie that you loke after in the lyfe, or in thother: for that the witte of manne, is to curroule and infatiable. But I wol tell thee a parte of those euris that we auopo. ipho are fuche-that of thou tafte them all well thou wouldest beare suche enuve to wardes be as thou thinkelt ive flouide beare towardes vou. Vli. Go to then, and tell me thus at the leafte. Go. There are manye mylerves and euvis . that man is subjecte unto: and that are occaso ons that I wyl thus remaine a beaft. But tt is not pollible that I thould refon of the al. for tyme well not ferue: for beeng foms what fed, by mature, who bath noo refe pect to any other thong then to my confernation, pronoketh me to take my refter and fomewhat to fleve buder the shadowe Vli. Tell meat of fome of thefe trees. the leaste for the satisfying of my mynde. tome one of the principall emplies.

Goto

Go.. 3 am contente. Unowe Alylles that man amonge other his infelicities and miserges, hath foure, eche one of the whyche onely (when 3 have it in remembraunce) causeth me to desper rather to be, what type beast socuer it were, then man.

And what are those gote? Go. The finall affurannce that he alwayes hath in his niphde of thinges to come the fulvition he bath of them of his own kinds with whome be is enforced to be continue ally conversaunte, and the fcare, and ref pecte of the laines. Vli . Thou thou keft on to manye thynacs. Go. And the chefe thinge is, to be able to anovbe the not thinkynge on them . Tell me a lytle. begonnong at the forth: what fuertve bath man at any trinc, to be able peaceably to emove one onely hower, the thoracs vies fente-frekeng fyzlt of the common forte. who are in the bandes of fortune: whome cuerpone knoweth, howe barvable and Supper the is:and afterwarde buder the power of Pernces, whoo have onelpe they well for laive : and the well

Dities

albest

euer

bem,

e the

e. 02

e, is

l tell

.סטם.

mall

eto

uibe

anb.

bere

that

afor

But

the

om

ref

come

te:

ine

cat

iDe.

of man(as thou knowest) is most infacial ble. Vii. In this thou favelt true: vet be that is lovie, boeth accommodate born felfe to the will of thone, and to the come maundemente of thother. Go. Wf wee wil fpeake then of that, that is our owne: who is be that can promise bim selfe the polletion therof for one onely bay freely: for that men are waren fo couetous. Ance thine and mine came into the world, that euery má cótinually watcheth, to thinke in what fort afwell lawful as bniawful. be may make him felfe riche, and an other man pooze. Vli. Truely men lay many more fnares for them felues, then they bo for you. Go. Df the continual feare ve baue . leaft vainces take them from you. epther by warres, or by a thousand other meanes. I will fave no more, but that I have fene menne, who have bene in fuche feare, least the ruches they have hab, shold bane bin taken from them, that they baue not bled them: but the winge them felues poore, and liupnge unferably, baue euer kepte theren hodden, whereby they have not had anve more commoditive by them, baupng

handrae them, then they that had they m not: but have rather habbe thus more, the thought to kepe them. Pli. 3 well not that thou fpeake of conetulnes: for this is a byce that cauleth men to go lo farre be fores therm felues, that they become not onelve the enempes of others, but allo of therm felnes. Go. I will not reason of the feare then that ve bane of theeues, of fernauntes and of thone owne wofe and chefelp of the be pounger then thou, it fuffileth that none of these infelicities bath any place amongelt bs, for we know not fortune, and not hauvng anve dufference betweene theme and myne, but polletinge every thing in common, one of bs leketh not to robbe an other. And we hanvage amonge be no superioritie at all (because al we of one kynd are of like power) fcare leffe, that our owne be taken from bs, by born that hath moze Arengthe then wee, wherby we should be caused to byde it.

A knowe that these thinges, are oc calions of manye thoughtes to men, but be that holdeth his affectio bnder the rule of reason, anoideth the most part of them.

Gote

tlada

e: vef

bom

שווש

f wee

inne:

fe the

reelve

.lince

. that

binke

pful.

other

manp

ep do

re ve

pou.

other

bat 3

luche

Cholo

baue

lues

euer

batte

em,

png

Go. And howe shall be impliyingly obey it, that alwayes spurneth agayne: Vi. Thou knowest that byctorie is never got ten swythoute travell. Go. Pe as you say, that ever fede your selves swyth sayre swordes. Come then to the seconde: what beaste is he, bespoes man, that feareth of thynges that are not presente: Vi. And what seare both man thereof: Go.

So great, that be alwayes lyueth in thoughtes. For pf he fee the wether ware cloudre, he begrnneth to feare , least e the baruest should be eurll. Then of be beare thunder of fee lyghtenynge, be is in fuche feare of the thunder froncs, that he not onely maketh bolves to the Goddes, but there have also bene of those, that have feb into caues buber the earthe, (because it w fapte, that they go but frue fote bnocr the earthe ) or that have covered them felues woth the stonne of a Seall, thinkong that thus folhe onelve, is never touched with the thunder stone. Vis. And howe many are there that have any fuche feare of lyke thynges ? Go. They that feare not thele feare other thinges. How many

are there among you, that feare fo muche to be speke, that it can not be sayoe, they areat any time in bealthe: not blyng that libertie that healthe graunteth to others in not byndyng them sclues to anye lawe: wherby they never eate of any thong that pleafeth them fo much as they appetyte requireth nevther dare they do any things out of that order, that they have of longe tyme bled: and of they fee the feafonne to chaunge any thing from his wonted ble, epther with heate or with colde, they are so afcroe, that they alter they bumos in fuche forte, that afterwardes they feale them sclues very eupli. Vii. Thefe are fo fereful men, that every most lytle thing troubleth them . Go . And they that are bolder, epther they love but a whole, or cls they weaken they nature foo muche, that as thep; pouthe is palte, ther appeare on them a thousande eurlies: or at the least rememberng the dylozders they baus done-they are in continuall sulvition.

Vli. And doeth not this also happen buto you. Go. po: for we alwaics lyne with one felfe rule, the which nature bath gene bs.

But

e obep

er got

as pour

b fappe

: fobat

reth of

Go.

neth ur

ivare

ife the

beare

**fuche** 

be not

s, but

haue

ecause

briber

m sel-

ikpng

uched

bowe

feare

feare

many

are

Ti.

Fli.

But then come to the suspition that von baue to be forfaken when you are freke. and to lacke that governaunce that is nes ceffary for you, because you have nede of fo many thynges:02 that your substaunce perofic not, whereby after you shoulde lvue with parnes and hardely, when you were recovered . The whiche thinges are not among bs, never being ficke in fuche forte, but that we can governe our selves thoughe we have nothinge & is in propers tie to any one of bs. Vli. And vet there are forme of those amongest you beattes, who for the prickinge of a thorne, or for some other chaunies, had neve to be holpen by bs. Go. There are fo fewe of those that they can make no number . And then , of the feare of beth that you have, the which feare we have not, what canst thou save to me:Vli. Daue not you allo fere of bethe Go. Ro, pf it be not prefente to bs, or bes aper to fele the torment thereof: where as to pout, the onelpe thinkinge on it, 02 the knowpinge the beterninate tyme, winge pon foo muche forowe, that there have bene of those, who to be rydde from suche pallon

pation, bave killed therm felues invito their owne hands, but let vislet this paffe and come to the care, and thoughte, that you bane of thinges to come . Alas what an unscheitte is yours ? not onelve to take thoughte for those thinges whereof you baue nede from bave to bave , but also for those that you shall have nede of a years of two to come, and vet you must prouide them; and take after continuall bede to the. Vi. soo that there is not lokewise peradventure among you beaftes that doo And who are there the luke? Go . Vli. The Definare whoo laveth bo in former, wherewith to love in wine ter. Go. It is true, but this is not, for that the bath any feare, that the thoulde lacke at that tome inherof to febe her, by fearlitie-or any other fuch occasio, as you bo when you prouvde you for the tyme to comme but because the can not suffer the colde of the winter (for then the neuer cometh from under the grounde the carieth her meat thither, wher the bath to above: and the is led to the downge thereof by nature, and not by feare, that the thould not almaies 1).i.

here are s, who for forme lpen by ofe,that ben of e which ou lave of Dethe 5, 02 bes bere as t,02 the .bemae ce haue m fuche pathon

hat von

e lycke,

nede of

houlde ben vou

iges are in luche

r felues

propers

alimaies finde retie on the earth, all the that the medeb. For bowe wilts thou that me thinkeon that that is to come, whoe neither knowe tyme, no vetthepartes thereof to Plin husine not yo the time, and ther are to manye of ron ; who energy means, when the fixing time commeth, ethe faule of the leafe, chaine contries as the finaleises, and that thes: and that lipbe them bender the earth, as the finakes and babaers, and fo many otherse Go. This is not for knowinge the time, but by feling before, the differences theref:ras ther a wil far further to thee, that we not onelye knowe the time, but also not the monunge of the beauen, which is his fub. tect, but we onely fele oufferences of the fealons, that it caufeth on earth, fomtune: beinging beat & fornetime cold , fornetime winde, and fometime rame, and fuch nas turall barieties. And thefe me knowe for muche before, t better then you, that you. take often orcalions by bs, to pronoficat: and knowell then how this knowlege con meth to be because we not bantua oure fantaly ful of a thouland topes, as you als maies

thapes have, fele every little chaunge of trane, the which is not lo worth von. viil But called thou the knowing of time up felidite: Go. 99oft great infelicitie, besink he (02 to fav better ) f mouing where book he's fouded, is the occasion of every chaunge, and finally that that is worle, the occasion of your corruption: whereby von that know it, fe beath alwaies before wand pou recken o owers, one by one, and you ar ever thinking, on that, of from time to time you shall have note of : the which is not fo to be, who line by the bemeticoenature: but what wult thou moze! pont folve is fo great, y vou take thought all for that that must folowe after your beathe: Vhi. This is done to leave all things or beined in fuch fort, that our chile adentoho are part of bs, map after leave their life o more quietly. Go. Df theic thur mes pare of weight, it thuld be a vleature: but you thinke also of those that are of no wight. Vli. And what are those: Go. Quen of vour grave, and as thoughe the earthe inere not the bringerial mother of all men and yeuery man had not his part therof, pout bre it of your prefts, the amog you g 19.y. bab

UMI

note .

mery

actb.

tries

that

akes

.but

f:tar

e not

atthe

lub:

of the

time:

etime

ch nae

we fo

t pou.

ticat:

rão sa

Dure

ou al

waies

Ge.

had no monre, should be lefte in wave to be beaftes. Vii. I woll not that we reas fon of this matter, for thefe thinges are mberned to the benefit of fome one of be, and they belonge not in generall to the kind. Go. Go to, let us palle to the other, the whiche is, the feare that pe have one of an other, the which thing is not among bs. for thou feelt no beaft of one house that is naturally enemye to the other of the fame konde, but by fome chaunce, by lone, bungar, gelofee, and fuche b and pet this very seldome. Vie. 4 ther are we enemies naturally one to the other. Go. Bo, but the bulaciette of your delyzes, bath turned it into nature.

For that quantitie infilinge name of you, wherienth nature would be content ted, the one of you leketh to take from the other that that he bath. And hereby so many warres growe amonge you, so manye befolations of cities, so many robbynges of countries, so many flaughters of you ple, so manye treasons, so manye the tes, and even to poploning the one the other of you, a thinge that never any of is inco

fem

Vli. He that will, map well semedy all these thunges. And after what fort? Ili. 180 contem ting him felfe with little, and to live of bun felfe, seperate from others. Go. .. The fysite you may perchaunce do, but not the other, without your moste great trouble. For you have nede of so many thinges, that there is none, who of him lette can prouide all thinges for him felfe, wherfore you must of necessitie owell to. gether with others. For the which thing cities were invented by you, where you, Meling complodioully together, might posite the one for the others nederand because you might bringe this to the bets ter ence, one not having alwaies nede, of thinges that an other hath, who neth neve of his, you also invented monp. trucks a most e goodly meanes, and bery. commentent for the commutation of themes. But because he wingeth so many com odities to your lining, you love it lo fare aut of order, that it is no telle occasion of cull then it is of good, for by your conte and feking thone to take it from thother. 1).w.

e treas

are

fbs.

e the

ther,

ens

BOILE

MIRC.

er of

2,3

in the

te of

nre.

the of

their .

on the

o ma

Butte

arges

fper

estes,

other

ines

fene

To many milchieues growe among bou. that you can never practile die hower together lafely, or without some sulpti Vii I will not benie, that this making difference betwene thone, and infine is not the occasion of many ends. and of much batted, the which can not happen to veu, who have all thinges in common. Potwithstanding , we agame this have frenothippe among bs, inheret there can be nothing found in the wo either more vrofitable, or more pleafaunt: in meanes werof we make common. ancly outwarde thinges, but alfo thoughtes, the griefes, the felicities, and enery other thing . Go. Is there not al frendibip among be, t not only amon those of one like kinde, but also ansong those of biners kindes, as the turtle domes and the popungaye, the pecocker, and the ptaion, the red bere & the falow, and u others: Vli. po: for true frendfup commeth of the good, and the househouse pou know neither thone not thather A therfore the frenothippes that are ante pl performactemento fome noughtp

pole, or that grow by profite, or beautiel rather are called practiles, and confurate ons, then frendshivves . So that yours are rather naturall inclinations. And bes fpdes this, frendship should be voluntar tre, and by election, the inbich thing you can not bo. Go. And vet if true frendibin be not amonges be neither is there flatter rie, as there is amongest you: the which perchaunce burteth no leffe the frendship belpeth. Vli. But we can know that, by the meanes of the biscourse of reason. Go. And by what meanes. fins the flatterer is so like to the frend and belides this flatter rie pleasing you so much that it will not fuffer pon to perceine the truth: Vli. Trus lve, both for the pleasure that it is to be mailed and for the felf nature of the thing it is no finalle difficultie to knowe who are flatterers, and inho are true frendes. being as wel the bucto of a true frend to please as of a flatterer: sauing vet that all Batterers in aduerlitie, forlake thee by and by and frembes not but it is a gret matter to know only that one is the frend, when thou bull nede of him:notivithstanding. D.nu.

fufp#

at thus

, and

ends.

n not

res in

aunf

berof

n-mot

fo the

ens,

otale

maelt

ingest homes in the

Piblio im life

**Grand** 

PIENS

be that considereth well, that easily know him. Go. And twinche way, teti me Toan these Vis. There are thanp thinges, whereby a frende may be knomen from a flatterer, but theferere the wineipall. The flatterer booth alivaies accomposate him felfe, to the conditions of him that he flattereth: bornge as he boeth, and chaunging also as he chaungeth, and faving that, that is the bery right was to line: where as the fremo almaies foloweth his ofone purpole, a boeth not accomposate him felf to any other thing then to the good. Wherfore the flaterer is likenned to a thabowe, the which al? mapes foloweth the body, ener boying as be boeth:and a frend in the light that Spineth above all thinges, always with out spotting it selfe. Besides this also, the flatterer marketh all that ever thou boeft : and the frend onely that that is good. The flatterer in all dopness that arr, or feme good, both gene the chiefplace and excuseth thee in vice, and burtaneth bin felfe : and finally, he never felicity any other thing, then to content stines.

as well in ill, as in good: the whiches frembe neuer both, who would not pleafe thee, but mus much as honedly requireth. Go. Wilel, when al that thou faielt were true, pet there is one other thinge, that both easie me, that I will not in any wife retourne man, and that is this the feare of the lawes, and of the punishmentes of Defred by them. Vli. Then boeft thon thinke, that to have lawes, is an cupil thinge to man! Go. Bo, but to bane mene of them is entil: for hereby the time perfection and weakenes of pour nature is feene. Aveil thou not that pour have fo many immoderate delives, and against pour ofwie wealth and profite, and pour are fo much ledo by them, that the light of reason is not sufficient to teache you to anothe them: but you are enforced to make an infinite multitube of lames to maine von from them by punishment, ambby feare: Ili. De, this is to the ill forte, but the good, borng that that is connement (no them, for bertues fake, haus not onely no feare of the lawes, but also ther

ntoin H me

hany

o the paies

tions be

aun.

berp

bak

weth

erer al:

DIE

that outb

dío\_

bou

t is

bat

ace

eth

eth

es, as

also they knowe them not. Go. And home many are there of thefee could they be reckned without often repeting the be ginning of the number: And if you were all fo. what an onquietnes bebe in your mind the continual care and marenes. that you must baue in beloing the hantell of reason to your sences, that they cary you not out of the right path of the fame. Vli This is made a cuffome: and of ace customed thinges, (as thou knowest) there growe no pattons at all. . . Go what papers muft you luffer, befoze you baue mabe it, fins you have alwayes by nature-areatest bester of that that is most forbidden pon: Where as to be it happeneth not fo, who bauing no beffer income nenient to our nature, can auopoe them all where and when it pleafeth be, with out refrect, or any feare, not onely of pus mibment, but also of frame, the which is among you a burben of no fmall weight. Vli. De bott you then much hercof, for in bery bebe it is a thing worthy wayle, not onely to have no fcare of the lawes, but; alfo not to feare thame. Go, And what faute

t

fante bane we of this, line we know it not: So that let be not talke of those thene ges that come not boter our knowledge. Let this finally luffile thee, that the los bertie that I emove in this fate, is fo pleasaunt to me (in respect of the multitube of bonbages that you have, of the greater part inberof, your folly, and amy bition are thoccasions, that baue bounde pour bandes to many thinges wherebyto nature bad fet them at libertie) that not onelp 3 will not retourne man , but also 3 will not practise amonge them. Anowing that you bynd not your felues onely to these your lawes, but also all thole beaftes, of whom you are feruch and that line familierly with you : for you hauerorderned that they be kept, to latif fre with there owne bodies, those burtes that they fould do to any other, blamings them even for they going to febe them in other mens fieldes: for the which thing you your sclues ought to be punished, for that you have made those thinges partie culer, by the meanes of thone and some, that nature habbe genen to pos

and

thep

be bes

were

pour

nes,

theil

carp

me.

aca

ere

an

110

bo

oft

es

me.

111

bo

Is:

.

1

the common. The tobich thing bath caused that you can not company fife toger there, as we be. And you are continually aferde, to lose that that you have, or to runne into some after myschiefe. So that emore than this your state so unhappely, and full of so many miseries, so; I will spend that lytic life that anamiceth me, in this state, without seare of death, or of anye other

thing.

# The fifte Dialogue.

Wlifes, Circes, the Pynos.



Lthough truthe (as the proverbe is) most bears Circes, seme ofte times to beede some hatred in the myndes of those to whom it is spoken: yet a know that it so much

displeaseth a noble hart, to have one thing in the mouth, and an other in the welf, that I will take courage to speake frelye, althoughe I should perchaunce in some parte doute, to offende thee. Cir. Speake on frely, all that thou wilt, most worthye Wisses, for ther is nothing more frend to gentle myndes, then the trueth. Vii. I doute, that thou hast not restored to them with whom I have spoken, the power holely to discourse, as thou hast done the speache, accordinge as thou promiseds me, I have sounde them so farre distaunt from the truther and yf thys were soo, I shouldo

togenaily

op to

pelp.

will

th

# The fyfthe Dialoge.

thould thinke thou harbett much occepted med me. For there is none of the that indepeth it not better, to be a beatt then a man, the whiche I would never believe they would saye, of they coulde be reason truckye. Cir. Truckye thou thous best have reason to thinke I had beceived thee, of I had so done. For those thinges should never be promised, that one eighter would not, or could not do: For those conseth of woughtines, and the other of society had so the selfer same thou while ses, that whyles thou spakes with them, they had subiles they were men.

Pli. And howe do they then not knowe to manifest an errour, and chiefely sins I have so tolde them the truth: Cir. They have found perchaunce so many commodities, and so many pleasures in that life, not knowen by vs. that it is no meruell. But go and folowe thine enterpise, so, peraduenture all shall not be of this sort, feare no kinde of beast that thou meatest: so, every one of them have bene men, so that none of them would burte thee. Vii. Dur wise menne of

Gretia

Br

can

me

gre

the

in i

oti

PE

ar

no

m

th

ø

fe

# The tytthe Dialogue.

Bretia are bont to lave, that they, who can be counfailed by them felues to line well and honeato, are put in the first de gre of bertue. And they that can not of them felues, but beleue the counsell of those who are wifer then they, are put in the fecond begre: but be that can not of him felfe, not pet will take counsell of others as thought by them not worthy to be munbed among men. And of this lost are they touch whom I have fpoken : So that it was marualle, though they woll not become men againe, but 3 ,that have more knowledge then they, knowinge that it is the very buctie of man to belpo others fould not pet herefore ceale to feke to bo this good, to those that are work the thereof. Wonder is a faire berd of dere I will be,if there be any Gretian among the. Tel me dere as o beauens gene von that that von most defuze, is there anve Ocetian bere amonge pou! Hi. D than ico be the godies, that I buderstand the bopce of man: and can speake as I was mont. Vli. I have perchaunse happened on one that bath not lofte the bnberstandynge, as thothers had, with who 3 have reasoned

CCCIN

tiud

en a

euc

rear

duoi

med

TACE

ther

e có=

foos

IDC4

m.

hat

me

ms

mp

in

10

T3

e

f

# The fifthe Dislage.

realized, fine he thus thanketh the mos to buderliand the loopber of man; and to be able to beake as the can. Hm. Arte thou a Gretian that boeft af he be this: Ph. Pe 3 am, and mp name is Whites. Hym. And I lyke wife was of Gretta, but I was a woman, before I was thus chan ged by Circes into an bounde. I'li. Dise I baue to be with women , when as it is wonte to be laine, take alimaies the impair parte, I halbe euen al at one popul fot withflaming & thatbe far the better this fied to have woken with esbe hinde. Hi. Mont what is thocaling Whiles, that thou goeff thus fehinge, of bere beampe Gretian: and tell me also of thou cantilas the gooddes alwaies belve thee) howeit chaunceth that I bnderstande thee, and can reason with thee, the whiche sing 3 was an bonde neuer chaused to me woth any other. Vis. Acknowledge thankes to me for this, for 3, by my requet, hane obtained of Circes, for the lane & brare to mp Gretians, lucence to weake with pour all, and befores thus, to make all those that well to retourne into theps former State

ffi

Ol

3

h

re

fo

0

P

h

t

The fofthe Dialogue.

fiate, and to leade them with me to thevi owne country, and thou art one to whom I will do this benefite, of thou wite it So that tell me thy inpude frelie:but bear reft thou: De thou aunswer me quickely: for you women, when you bethinke you ouer much on thinges, you drowne your selves therein, by the meanes of the lyttle Discourse and smale understandenge that you have, whereby those aunswers are onely prayled in pon, y pou make quicker ipe, Hyn. Do: loe there is a quicke aunfreec. Vh. But this halbe none of the praised answers, though it be quicke. Hin. And whoe for the Because it is all out of reason. Hin. 3 will not that thou fave to Milles, for I have bery good reason to save no. Vlis. Then tell me why,02 els I thoulde not thinke my felfe Hin. Thonkest thou not latisfied. that I have reason, that I will not be refored into my former beinge, who (as. 1 haue tolde thee) was a woman: Vii. Do for pet thou fouldelt be a reasonable creature: whole state I fee thou muche estemest, and thynkest better then the 34 fate.

UMI

mos

at den

Arte

na

tiles.

but

chan

Die

itis

mile Anti-

ime

Cas

ett

des

11

oth

LEB

u

m

111

fe

er

to

# The tytthe Dialogue.

state of any brast, sins thou thankeds for muche the Goddes, for that thou baddeft pomer to speake againe, the whyche is onely appropriat to man . Hym . Alas the being a reasonable creature is not the raufe that I will not returne into my for mer flate:but § 3 must become a woman againe, as I have told thee, for that women be fo much befppled by pou, that ther baue bene of those wife men among pou. that have bene bolde to affirme, that we are not of pour kinde, and others have Taid that the female is a male occasioned: the which meaneth nothing els, then a thinge made by nature, contrarpe to ber purpole evther for imperfectio of the febe in for befaulte of the matter. The whiche thing how far it is contrarve to the bery amer of nature map well be manifelt to enery man, for that we also are as necesta en to your generation as your felnes:and Afterwarde that thomae, that is beane of be sig able to endender the like to it felfe: the whiche they that are borne of two bimarfe kindes can not do: as may be fene by experience in Bules, who are borne of an

an

fo

no

ar

m

bi

th

m

h

9

8

Í

The tyfthe Dialogue.

an botfe and an Affe. Vi. Haft thost so muche philosophre ? Hy. Warnell not therat Aliffes, for my busbande was an ercellente philosopher, wherby 3 also was enforced keving conversation worth bim to lerne somwhat theroffand besides this thou knowest, that philosophye is to manne almost naturall. Vli . And vet hast thou not knowe bow to remedy one of the principall defectes, that the being a woman bringeth with it? Wilhy what is that ? Vli. The despte to chatter, that can do fo much in thee. that thou befireft not to return into a moman but only to baue the talking again. thanking, as thou bibbelt even nowe, the Goddes, fo: that thou haddeft the power. againe to speake. Hi. And thinkest thou not that I have reason therof, fins pour kepe women for flaues, and for fernantes and not for copanions (as right requireth) a thing fo wicked and fo far against the order of nature, that none other be af ken but vou bar bo it. Beke a litle amon what kmo of beltes thou wilt, and & thalt find amog none but p p femal is a copanió e na 3.y. **icruaunt** 

de fa

ddest

be is

Alas

ot the

fogs

man

wo

ther

ou,

me

aue

teb:

na

ber

eds

the

TP

to

Ta

nb

2:

i

le

n

### The tofthe Dialogue.

brugunt to the male.afwell in pleasures as in paines, ercept in the kond of man: inho wil be called Lord oner all, whereas be is a most endl and an ominst typaunt, to bandle his companion in fuch forte. onelve for that he feeth the was made by nature formiobat of leffe firength and corage then he was. Vii. And what bos ine to you that you have to greate cause to complayne. Hy. Bearest thou it note frift pou kepe be for pour bound fernantes. Vii. Db, lave not fo, for thou boeft be inconge: but fay for companions, and thou shalte say well. Hy. Is the called a companion , where the one is alwayes bounde, and the other a mayiter: and veraduenture(the which is woale) we mutte not bye this bondage by weight of golde fins pen have founde thes goodle take that when one of be will companie weth you, (to lave after pour owne minbes) the mult gene you money . Vli. We muen ted thus onelye for your profitte. Hr. Audge it thou, whether to pape them that commaunde be be for our profit , where others paye them that obeve them. But tell

UMI

tel m

brott

13ec

tle sp

not t

that

fath

uett

ther

ker

cau ma

boi

aft

ta bu

ft8

6

be

b:

u

8

The tyfthe Dialogue.

tel me after what fort this cultome was. brought in by you for our profite: Vis-Because knowing that through your let tle fpirite and fmall wiscome, you coulde not kepe pour lubitaunce, it was thought that the lame parte of ryches, that your fathers of brothers gene you, thould be ge nen by pou to pour bufbante, not because they be mayllers therof, but as your ta kers bebe thereof, they kepe it for you, be cause you at any time remaininge sole, may have wherwith to live. And marke bow after they; deathes, you may alwaies aske it: the whiche is cleane contrary to that that thou lavelt, for it is all to the burt of your bullandes, and of they; ful Stannce. And it Spould be rather vied, and so right would, that the husband when be marieth a wife, should on thother part bring as much money with him, as the tufe geneth her for his townter, and after they hould both frend in comon, as longe as it lafted, and then every one proute for him felf. For in dede it is not very good for be, that we attend alwaies to get abrode, and you to confinne at home. And then at J.IU.

res

am

285

nti

tes

pp

200

100

ule

ote

m

eft

mb

led

25

eD.

te

De

De

th

be

11

CE

nÉ

11

# The fofthe Dialogue.

at our beath bestruction and spovie to bethe k made oncly of our goodes Hi. Dur garnes in the boule are farr greater Will fes, then yours abrode: and to prone this true, thou thalt neuer fee any gather toge ther areat quantitie of riches, if be bane not a woma in the honfe, that kevethand feeth well to that, that he bath gathered together. Vli. I beleue this, and in this I thinke well that you are much better then we. for by your smale bart you are by nature much moze houshold servauns tes then we: but then if you must take care onely, of that that we gather, then it belogeth more to you to ober then to commaunde. for in as much as pour witte is occupied, and bigilaunt about small thing ges, in so much is it bumete to governe areat thinges. And therfore it is lapbe, that women never deferue so much to be prayled for any thing, as for obetience. Hi. This is a thing that you fav, be cause it is good for your purpose: but aske of us a litle-and if this fuffile you not, afke experience, and you that le whether we be mete to gouern gret things or not. Barke the

UMI

Drai

confi

it ini

king

geb ! of

thun

be f

ther

they

one

mb

alti

the

mo

to

th

12

fo

fti

kı

Se

tt

# The tothe Dialogue,

the kingebome of the Amalones, hower long time it was governed by wome.and confider if they have bene able to enlarge it without your wit and frength: Of the kingbome of Babilonia, fo much enlars. get by bemuramis: and of the beminion of Sethia by Tomiris, I will sprake no. thing at all, for that your ofone frozies be full therof. Fli. And bowe many that they be that are able to like things could they be reckened with the syngers of one onely bander Hi. Thankes be to pouwho deue them none occasion therof: but alwaies you kepe them fall thette within the walles of your houses, occupied in the mooft byle bufineffes that are necessarye to the fernauntes charge: bling to fave, that that woman oncly descrueth to be prapled, whole bedrs and praples, go not forth of the walles of her boule. Potwith standinge, of you marke well, you shall knowe also of them, in these so base and feruple bufines, fuch extreme biligence, that those boules wher women owel not, that ar not gouerned by women, feme in J.uu. respect

to be

Dur

Mis

this

toge

bane

and

ered

this

tter

are

uns

ake

nit

m

e ia

ms

ne

e,

be

te.

2

ke

ie

9

2

2

# The lytthe Wialogue.

respect of the others, like hogge sties, and not a parabile, as forme of pour beretofore have had hert to lape. I will fay nothing at all of the government of pour bobes, because the apparaunce it selfs, the appar rell, and many other thinges, canfe those men to be manifestive knowen, who are gouerned by women, from thothers. Fli. Truely in these thinges you can bo very well. Hi. Wie thall also bo even as well in greater thinges, of you would fuffer be to put our handes there to. Vli. Well, go no further , leafte it chaunce to you, as it bob to a certapne homaker, who fyndinge fault with an pmage for having the buckle of his shoe ample, and being prapled therfore, toke courage to bilpsayle bun in certagne other places: whereby it was favoe to him: hold the peace, for this belongeth not to thee. Hi. And pet at the least, with all this, I would we might please you. But you never bo any other thing then lament pon of be, no; pet can we never have good worde of you. Wis 3 will not that thou say thus: for we alwayes bongur

# The fofthe Dialogue.

hamoure you much more then our owne Hi. Bot with geninge bs any rule or aucthoritie at all, epther in the house, or abrobe : but with settinge tos at the highest place of the takle, or with some louing woode, and this one ive in the flower of our ace-by the occafrom of our beautie, that matreth your Defines to please be but when the beauty s palte, Goo knoweth howe we are harr beled at pour bandes, both with wordes and bedes. Vii. Ah, tay not fo: fo; this should be to areat bukindnes. I mill not speake of bedes, for not publiftinge of that that every man know eth not so well. But howe can you creule vour felues of words, fins you have made for a viouerbe, that a hulband bath oncly tino acoo baves of his wife, that is, the Dave that the commeth to his house, and thother is , when the goeth out thereof, borne to ber grave: Vli. Those are thinges that men fometimes speake merely

one to an other, and to passe over the troubles of the world, but they thinke not so m debe. And that this is true: see howe the A.b. most

Sann

tofore

thing:

bies,

uppa:

those

who

bers.

can lo Do

pou

thers

fe it

avne

b an

fboc

toke

ther

him:

t to

ben

ner

mill

pes

our

# The tyfthe Dialogue.

most varte or rather all men, take wines and I will kay further to thee, that they that take none, are alivaies taken for Araunge me and of a life of fmall maile. Hi. And what, ble pou not alle to lap, that he inho bath bad a inife, descrueth a crowne of pacience, but be that bath bab twaine, beforeeth a crowne of folly. Mi. This was not faire without some occasion . For the second mariages , and chiefely to them that have children, are for the more parte, greater occasions of enill, then of good. And they feltome tyme have that knot of love, that o firste baue. And allo in keping vou companie, vacience is bery necessary, for you are all by nature fomewhat bugracious, fo that one of our wife men was wont to fav. that when a woman went to ber bulbab. the carried one of ber handes before, and therein a litle fore branda light, mear ninge thereby that the put fyze into the boule wherein the entred. Hi. Bay,be not ashamed to say the reste also, howe he fato that the carred in the bande behinde a boke, to robbe the boule, whereof the went

# The fofthe Dialogue.

focut out. Pli. I will not benye that fome of these thinges have not bene laybe by some of those, whom we have called twie men, and the fromatte nature of Come of you , bath bene thoceasion therof: not I will not also benye the straungenes that some of be somtimes which towardes von ther I fay that are nought and of lie the knowledge: for they knowe not howe profitable you are buto bs , and with how many incommodities, and troubles, we Chould leade our life without your helpe: But I will even confesse buto thee-that we are without you a thinge imperfectes inherefore we oughte alwaies to make much of vou, and have the same chunati on of you, that we have of our felues. And be that boeth otherwife, beferveth not to be called a man. And although it appere buto be that nature bath made you of leffe valor then bs, we should pet consider that the bath bone it for our benefite. for pt pou were of that valozand of that wit that we are, you would not take papers, in those thinges that you bo, in ferning bs wheref the profite commeth to be ours, of the

ber

for

ile.

ap.

eth

hab

me

und

are

of

me

fte

pe,

all

at

ישו

iD,

nd

18

he

bc

he

DC

he

nt

# The fofthe Dialogue.

the which we are no lette bound but o pour the buto nature, for gening be the being. So that let it not greue vou, if some one have spoken bundwisedly of you, that that thou faielt for they are many moo, that haue pravled you, and worthely. for there bath bene no lacke of those, that have lapo, that we should line so miseras bly without you, that it should be better to dre, and that you are our crowne: As that most wife king of Egypt did, who willing to thewe his riches, to an other king, at the last for the most noble thing be had, be thewed him his wife, faying that there coulde not be founde by any man, a more precious tewell, then a wife moman. Hi. And if it be fo how chaunfeth it then, that we be so entil handled by Vli. And what would you in thende that we should bo: Hi. Haue 3 not told thee alredy, that you fould kepe bs for companions, and not for fernants? Tell me I way thee what right is this, that you have taken for a custome, that it is lawfull for you, to be as you lifte, and not for bs, brideling bs with the dannger

ger of our honesties: why doo not you as mell also differest a familye, when you dene place lo losely to your appetites, as pon fay that we bo, who are muche more pronoked therto the you are, not so much by that most burning deloze, that the for bodding be a thong cauleth, as by your infatiable and curled importunitie ! And then of you have taken ons our boneftes from bs. do you not thinke bs worthve of all blame: Vli. Wilhy do ve not keepe it then more villgently then you bor Home shoulde it be possible for he to kepe it, when every one of you bath a keve thereof: So that blame pour selucs and lay the faut one your felues. whe you fee any of be lofe our bonefty. And by foo much the more, as you lay you are of are ter braine and more wiscome then me. vii. of thou brobest well consider . the cause that moneth be to bo this thou mole dest save it were reasonablye done. But thou measurest pour beinge with oures. and bereby groweth the errour. Well me a litle, boil thou thinke it reasonable that a man shuld leve those goodes, and those bono25

Pott

eina.

one

that

that

FO2

that

fera=

etter

: As

who

ther

una

eng

anp

pule

un

de

ı-in

E 9

its:

Nis.

t it

mb

an.

rec

#### The tofthe Dialogue.

honors that he hath gotten, with his trainable, and his wifedome, to one that is not his childer. Hy. Po truelye.

Mi. And howe should be be by any meas nes affored that the childe were his , if it were lawfull for you to be your defires! the which thing maketh no matter at all to you beaftes, who make oncly fo much accompt of them, as is necessarve for them. And when they are brought to that pake, that they live of them klues, you knowe them no moze. Him. And in this thong of choloren alfo, what company is pource, and what righte, or what equitie is there amonge pou, that whi les they are little, and of most great trous ble for thou knowell howe great a paine tt is to bring by a man ) pou leave them bolely buter our charge, and you will beare of no trouble at all: the which thing is genen to none other bealt, then to you! Vi. And you peraduenture canne not seue them to nurle to anopde pour felues of them, wherby they are very little bound to pou none other creature but you bling the fame : Hi. And whoo is the cause thereof

1

1

t

t

thereof but you, that will not onely some times not beare them crye, but also wyll not take with them any most little trobles. And after when they are bygge, both you and they together agre to make none accompte of bs at all, and not only in dedes but also in wordes, sins they are called on ly your children, and of you they take their name, their familye, and all that ever they have without making any metion of bs at all. Vii. This is not done bothout most great consideration.

Hi. And what is the cause, but your aucthoritie, as in all other thinges, that so, being more able then we, you make your reason as your selves lift. Vii. The cause is for that they have the sensitive substaunce, and the being man, onely of the s. Hi. And serve we there then so, nothing? Vii. So not in this, because thou must perceyue, that the semale, of her self can not give two thinges, that are engendeed by her, but the vegitative substaunce the which is that y tres have: nor ca bring the to any greater perfection, without the piale. And thersore nature that doeth nothersore nature that doeth nothersore.

UMI

s trae

at is

mea:

, If it

fires:

er at

elv fo

Tarve

the to

lues.

nd in

Bam

phat

mby

trous

aine

bem

will

hing

rout

not

lues

dnu

ling

aufe

reof

#### The fyfthe Dialogue.

thing in baine, made not the male and female amonge plantes . But if the bib make in any, as for example in the Co moll (the mbich bereth beries like a hain) the female onely beareth fruite, and the male is batren, e it nebeth not that they toure together, fins that that we engens med by them, thall not have, but the bes getatine substaunce, the whiche the fer male alone may gene . And othis is true. markett in bennes, who of them felues make the egge, the whiche bath the be citative substaunce, after that be wareth to a certaine beterminate quantetve: but the beaft can not be made by them. the inhigh bath the Centitive Cubstaunce of they couple not with the cocke, that he mape geve it them . And also pou wo men fometimes engender of pour felues. in the mattrice, a pece of flethe, called by Philitions, Mola, the whiche for that it bath the begitatue substaunce, groweth wa certaine point, but it percepueth not for that it bath not the sensitive substance for this (as 3 hauc told thee) the male gre neth. Then of our sholowen baue their animate

#### The fyfthe Dialogue.

unmate being of the fensitive substance. and finally the being men, onely by be. they are worthely called oures: and for this only cause, you are permitted to lene them when you lift, and we cannot . Hi. And what reward thall we have for our painfull bringing them opper Fli. That that women continually hanc, that is to be alwaies bonozed, and mainteis ned by them, of you forlake them not: for almost all children doe this: and whoe that doeth it not, is bn worthy to be called a man. But nature, because they should not faile bereof hath put into them a certaine inclination of love, towardes the mothers, that it semeth that the greater parte, loue them more tenderly then they Do the fathers. Hi. As though we los ned not out of measure, bothe them, and also our busbandes: ve rather there baue bene of those amonge bs, who herving of the beath of ther children baue Bied fober ly, and others who feing their bulbans des de , have killed thermi selues with their owne handes: indging that it was Into them, neither lawfull to line with B.L

mb fe

be div

Co

ham)

no the

t then

ncen#

be be

be fer

true.

ielnes

ne be

mar

betve:

bent-

unce

. that

mo.

lues.

क्ष पर

at it

weth

not

aúce

e aps

their

outed man, not boneft to accompanie them felues with mo then one. Vli. These are thinges, that althoughe they feme at p first fight to before fome praise for p they seme to procede of lone, or by Cournes of minde: come rather even of folithnes.oz of weakenes of bart.by bous tinge not to be able to lyue alone: for pt nature, who ever both the best in al thing mes. had knowen, that it had bene beffe, that the wife and the bulband shoulde dpe at one tome, the thoulde have caused that it should have ben so . But let. bs let thele lo longe discourses go: welte thou returne into the former being, and come with me into Gretia? Hi. 20 I fape, for I will not become a woman scaine in no cafe: fo; thou mounteft well bane percetued, whether the occasions that I bane tolbe were reasonable or not. Vii. And because they seme not so buto me, afke theest againe. Hi. Thou maift talke of it at plefure, for it toucheth the nothing at all: I am thus an Honde, of as much aucthorite at the leaft as the male, I go above as be boeth: Beitber ret

UE

tr

111

p

pi

n

b

ſ

1

## The tyfthe Dialogue.

pet have I fo many forowes in the below ueraunce of mp pounge, not lo manne troubles in bringing of them by, as 3 fould have of my children, being a wo man. Mi. Werp well faid: as thoughe pou also have no troubles and griefes at pour beliveraunces: and batte pou not nede also to pourge pou as our women bauet Hi. De,but nature bath genen be fuch Arength, that we can bo it of our felues: and fo much knowledge, that we eate of a certaine herbe called Ara, the which restoreth us to health at the firste. And have not you also troubles in Vli. bringing uppe of your younge, affel as we have in bringing by of oures. Hi. Most sewe in compartion of you: for they having nede of farre fewer thinges then pours, must neves geue bs lesse troubles, and those feine being pronoked by a cere tame naturall instinction, that gibeth be in all our bounges, some to be nothinge barbe at all: wheras to you, who are not guites lo cotinually by nature, they feme more grenous. So plabor no more Aliffes in chloiting me to become a woma again for I line B.u.

Hipe

li.

thev

aife

2 by

nof

10011

12 pt

birv

fte,

ulbe

aue

tlet.

olte

dna

Ro

tan

llac

ins

ot.

nto

ott

etb

De.

be

er

res

#### De fetthe Dialogue.

tine far better contented and more freipe thus a Bunde, then 3 did whiles 3 was a woman. But I lave buto thee, that if a Chould chaunge my fate, I wold moze willingipe become a bumaine creature igaine, then chaunge me into any other beatte. And of thes thou march be fure, to) when I must faune. I de more the pa thes made by beaftes then the water be ten by mennes feete Go then thy water on the brage, and I likewife will ao to confinme the reft of my life, among these woodes: for now fins 3 bane bab power to speake againe, without retur ming bnto a woman, I beare not only no enuve to the Goddes, but also not buto men. Vli. I will not Honde that thou Canb fo much in this thine opinion, but that thou confider, that men 'understande more then you, and that I geue thee this counsell onely for thyne owne profit, and for the love that I beare the for that thou arte of my Gretta , and for no mofit of mine at all. Hy. You fay alwaies thus inhies we have convertation with you, and pet notivithstandinge pou kepe in alwaics

State of the

1

# The totthe Dialoge

alwales onder. Vli. Besides this thou shall buderstand, that Cyces bath genen thee power to speake, only because thou maiest sape thy minde: for the will not that I cause any to take they? somer shape as gapne, savinge they onely that will. So that if thou will remaine thus in an Hind thou shalte have noo power to speake any more, the which thinge, as thou did best shewe, thou bery much estemeds. Hi. Is believed that this were true, I can not well tell what I would do. Vii. Oh shouldest thou doubt hereof, and know west that Deare speake not?

But what matter is that: lins I also must be conversaunt onely with Deare, and we have other meanes to the we our necessities one to an other, the which are so fewe, and so rare, that they trouble is little. So that seke some other Alpstes so I for my part wil remaine in this state.

The

frelpe

mas

that of

111028

ature

other

fure.

the pa

es be

n the

e mill

mona

e hab

ceture

ılv na

bnto

thou

, but

tanoe e this

t, and

thou fit of

thus

you, pe to vaice

# The syrt Dialogue.

Alphes, the Lyon.



Is nowe not what the cause may be, that not ture (who men saye can not erre) bath made the semale so farr bifferent from the male, onely in the humame kinde.

H

竹业

bi

b

n

1

I looke among fowles, the one is of as muche valoure as the other, we els of the lette, that it is almost not knowen: and all men may see, that the semals in coveringe the egges, or in bringing of the younge, will not take any moors payment all, then the male. As it is also among the beaftes of the earthe, and in those that line in the waters: for that the semale (as I sayo) is of as great vertue, and of as much sorce as the male. But in the humayne kynde, the woman is of so much less grength, then the man, that those vertues that

that are in him, evither they are not in her. or els ther are fo imperfecte there, that they are fearlely percepued to be in her. Let them then complaine of nature, that bath made them lo and let them not complayne of bs, pfit feeme to them rather to be our fernauntes, then our companie ons: for this commeth netber by our force. noz by tyzanny, but of theyz lytle valour, and spirite. Wherby, fearinge that they coulde not knowe, or be able to lyne with out vs, they bringe theym felues buder our obedience, remayninge willingive buder that poke: where as pf they were of loke noblenelle of monde, or of loke frenathe as we are, we shoulde never he able to keve them by force . There fore it is not to be maruepled at, pf the with whom I spake, well not from an Dinberretourne to an humaine creature. fonce the muste becomme a woman at gayne: Because, that where thus an Spinde, the lyueth in libertie, a thinge to pleasaunte, as none other thrnge is more, the thoulde beynge a woman, bes comme a feruaunte : none other things k.úv.

UMI

t the

can

e the

rent

nelp

nhe

isof

of fa

en

o tre

alfo

in

the

ne,

in

lo Te

es at

#### The fyrto Dialoge.

In all the woolde more grenous to him, inbo is a man in bede . Let me then feke, of a canne bo this benefite, to fuche as it mape be good, fince it foould be burt to ber. And peraduenture there maye be some one amongest these Liones that I fee come towardes me . But what boo 3 : Wilho knoweth , troublings them, whether they will harte me, a not : the which they would not bo, pf desturbe them not, of they be not wro noked thereunto by hunger. And althoub Cyrces bath tolde me, that I fould have no feare of any beaff, that is within thes ber 3fland: 3 can not pet but baue fome feare of thefe, they countenaunce is fo borrible, and fearefull. Potivithitanding knowing the love that the beareth me, I will truff to ber wordes, and go bolbe lve towardes them . Lyons (as nature kepe pou withoute anye trouble, in thes pour kynde,o; he that can chaunge pou into that that you most ochere) tell me is here anye of you, who, whiles be was man, was a Gretian ! lette bim tell it mo mentelly. For ye be before (as he thouto 00

be, to become manne againe, and to retourne into bes countrey, be bath thes bave (thanked be love ) chaunced on one, that mave boo for burn both the one and theother. Li. I was a Gretian, as thou also shouldest be, of the speach that thou fpeakest be naturall to thee. Vii. Dea. 7 am alfo a Gretian, and my name is Uluffes, of thou cuer bearde thereof whiles thou were a man . Li. Dea, be: tre often: and not oncive whiles I was in Grecia, but afterwardes also in many other places as 3 fapled. But tell me, hafte thou lefte the arte of warre, by the whiche I thinke thy name be spredde not oncive thoroughe Gretia, but tho roughe all the worlde, that thou art fo here arroued evither els hathe fortune bevuen thee bother, as the didde me? Bot foctune, but define to fee the worlde. For our Cretia hauing ouer come all those people, who were enemies thereunto, and 3, not knowing what thing moze to to, to gette me honour, gave my selfe to saplynge. Li. And ipneth pet thy Penelope, whole honestye B.b. mag

burt

that

inbat

linge

20,9

pf

P20

bogb baue

thes

ome

isfo

ding

me,

lbe

ure

bos

2011

me

Das

me

ole od

has an example of all our Bretia? Pli. She liveth and the defer that I have to fee ber acavne, together with befier to lee my frendes and my countrey frereth me to much that I bave afked lycence of Cv21es. (of whom I am peraduenture no leffe belouch then of her) to retourne into my countreviand for the love that I bere to mp Gretians, to make all those to retourne men, that will, and to carve them with me. And this is the occasion that 3 asked pf there were any Gretian amongelt pou : and I am glad that I baus found thee to acue thee fo favrea aufte. Li. Although sometimes it chaunce that one beforing to boo thee a pleafure, boo of fend thee, pet thouldest thou thinke thy felfe not a lytle bound buto bum , bauing respect to the goodnes of his minbe, and not to bis little knowledge: for of the one the will thould be praised, and of the other nature blamed. And fo do I to the Willes. thankinge thee of the good mynde that thou half towardes me, but the gifte 3 will not accept: for where thou thunkelt

it shoulde be profitable and deare unto me at food be noviome and to my great hisbleasure. Avi. And inbo for is it then better to be a beaft then a mane Li. De truely: and that this is true-afke of that our twile Gretian , who was come monly wont to lave: that if man monaht be sene well within, it should easilve be knowen that he were even a beffell, and a free house, made by nature, to lave by therein all his cuilles. Vli. De ought herefore to blame him felfe, muche more then nature: for oftentimes, by ouers muche folowinge his appetite, he de-Aropeth his complexion in suche sorte, that he birn selfe is the cause of all his burtes. Li. I speake not of euples of the body Alpacs, I speake of them of the monde toho are farre more weight and more baungerous. Vli. Lav I will not that thou save this, so resolutely. For this our boove beynge none other thinge, then a wagan that carreth our foulc, pf be be feable and weake : the bule canne not doo perfective her operations

hane

ier to

2reth

tce of

re no

bere

o res

beur

at 3

none

aus

ofte.

that

ofe

thy

ing

dne

one

her

es,

hat

E

operation, or els with very gret difficultie. Li. 3 will not beny, that the bnante bil politions of the body let not the operation of the monte: But I lave berely, that the infirmaties of the mond, bo much more burt to man, then those of the bobie bo: and that there come many mo ends.and baumaers of the one then of thother. But toby labour I in this who that he be that can lay, that they are not farre worle and more grenous, being in the best part.and most noble of man: Vli. I knowe well that the mynd is more noble then the bos by, notwithstanding, not being able to marke without the body, even to burteth the endl of the one as of the other.

Li. Where as those of the mynde, deceins the bery often times, so much, that not not the face, of the minutes of the pulles, of the face, because the face of the face, because the face of the face, of the face of the f

onely

a

oncly we leke not to be fre therof, but we accommute theyen good, whereby after warte groweth our milery, and continus all bnouletnes: and often times the loffe of our countrye, of our frendes and chilbeen, of goodes, and bonefite, and a thous fand other mischiefes. Wilhere as by them of the bodie the most that can come theres of is death, the which must come in anve wife. But what needeth anye more : pl among the ends of the body, you recken thole the worle that take from the patient the fense and knowledge, as the letharge the fransie, the fawiling fickenes, and kuch loke: And if those of the minde do ur fuch fort that be jubo bath them . know eth them not: are not they then to be accompted most greuous: Vii. Truely this favinge is most true. Li. Thou knowest that to be sicke sometimes, is graunted by the Whilitions to be no great euill, for that nature so requireth. But vet not fo much that manne knowe not. that be is not in bealth, and bath not neve to be bolven: for the knowinge to baue mede of remedie, is a very good figne in & pacient

lite.

MG.

tion

the

1028

DO:

and

But

bat

anı

mb

eti

box

to

dts

ila

bě

be

te

oş bê

TA

18

rt

paciente that be thall recover his health? And the can not be bone in the eniles of the minberfor be who by them is ares ueb,can make no right indgemet of him ·felfe, the end being in that parte, to the which the indocument thereof apperters neth. And for thes cause, folithnes is the gretell euill that can chaunce to man. Foramuch as be that bath it, never know eth it:and knowing it not, never feketh allo if be may find any remedy to biburs ben hm felfe thereof. Vli. This felfe fame thing chaunfeth properly to bronkerbes, who till those fumes of the wone he fetled, that let the places wher thinner fenfes mult worke their operations, knoing not their brankemes, whereby they thinkinge to bo well, bo a thouland thing ces worthy blame. Li. Dronkennes is none other thing then a kind of folly: But where as in this, those organnes, Inhere the knowledge is made, are marred for a time, by the meanes of the wine. in that other they are most commonlye marred for ener. But what more areater figure

Æg

m

bo

kú

no

no

an

111

lo

fe

m

tic

VI

rú

th

na

a

bl

fo

al

CO

ic

al

tt

n

Mane wilte thou . that the endles of the monde are more grenous, then those of body, then that & thalt never find any, fee king of thefe of o body, cal an ague belth. not the haung o tilicke, good foundness no; the gout, good bispolition of p wintes: and in those of the mind, thou shalte find many that call anger foutnes, wanton loue, frendship: enup, emulation: and ferefulnes, biligence: Wilhereby it cominctb that those seke and love the Whish tion, and these five and bate the rebuker. Vli. Of howe much entl is this cone ring of vices with the cloke of vertue. thoccasion in this worlde : and with a name worthy of honor, to be those them ges, that beforue none other thonge then blame and dispeaile. Li. And put ale fo to this, that he inho is troubled with any infirmitie of the bodye, goeth molt commonly to bed, where be findeth, why les be gouerneth bim felfe fome reft and also some time, to anoide the griefe of the euill:pf be toffe aboute in the bed, 03. moue to much, be bath about bin o coue reth bim again, a celeth not to bid bim loe:

m.

les

Tes

m

the

eps

the

m.

104

th

T

lfe

m

no

er

0

ep

110

25

**7**%

5,

rs.

2,

3

2

M

as flil as he may: But be that is fiche in s mind , never findeth quiet , or amp reft at all, but rather be loueth ma continus all trouble, and bath none that geneth bum any contentation of beloe: whereby euen as to them that faile, that tempelte that fuffereth them not to take the bauen is farre worfe, then that that letteth the failinge: So also the emis of the mynde. neuer vermitting him to take the bauen of reason and to anker in the same , that is troubled with them are muche worfe. Finally if thou milt plainely knowe. home farre they of the minde are worle. confider that he, who is subtecte to those of the bodie. fuffereth onely the eutl: but be that is subjecte to those of the mind. fuffereth not onelwthe enil, but be both it alfo. Vli . Howe can this be sene . sins all they comonly that do eutl, take hede of men know it not. Li. Seke the occasion of all the bariaunces, and calamities that chaunce in the worlde, and thou thalt fee it. For thou shalte knowe that they come of none other thing, then of ambition, enupauarice, anger, or of lyke infirmi tres

#### The lyrte Wialogue.

mities of the mind of man, the which be Moes the taking the ble of reason from bin trouble bim continualive fo muche. that be neuer fuffereth either him felf .co others in quiet, and one of this forte only is fufficient to trouble a whole citie . and chiefely of he be of any degre og eucthoris tie at all. vli. Are not these diseases of the mynde, the which then faicff are to much moze grenous and moze baunges rouse then those of the bodye, found also amonge vou! Li. Ao. Vli. Take bede pet that thou be not fo much becerued by them, that thou knowe them not: for me thinketb, that reason will, that they be farre work in pout then in be, for that you have not the vic of reason. wher with you mught rule theim. Li. we have not the realo as you have, where with you coulde perchaunce refrains theym: though not all together, vet at the left in some part: we have not also an appetite fo mmoderate, and fo infatiable. as pou have, for that we know not of ma me thinges that you knowe . Tell me, what ambition wilte thou that there be LL amonact

Ache tu

um rest

ontinus.

aeueth

hereby

mpelle

bauen

eth the

monde.

bauen

e . that

morfe.

rome\_

morfe.

those

l: but

mind.

oth it

, lins

hede b

on of

that

ilt fee

come

tion,

CINI

tpes

# Die forte Dialogue.

timingelt be, for that all we be equall, Inherby the one of be never dispifeth the other:not anpe fuperiotitte, at begree of honor is amonged be , that found tryre out minbes to obteine it , by any hind of briaft meanes, as you bo, tobo are to far blinbed by this before, that you are wont to lave, that pf one thould biolate tuffice, be thould bott onely to regare ! Enupe tan neuer be amongelt those of one felfe hunte , they all being equall , and lefte amonge thole of an other hinbe, the hauing no indgemente, or knowledge at all of their felicitie. Couetouines for that we have not thinc, beupded from myne, hath no place also amongest be : and so lokelute manne other byces; that cause pour lyfe to be moft bnhapppe : whereby there haue bene amongeft our wife Bretians, which have faid: that man amonge all other creatures, belde the principalitie onelye of mileries and cuilles. . Well, about that it be true, that we have many ends that you have not : we have also many got things that are not amog pon . Li . And what are those : Vii .

f

Merines. Li. And I fap further to thee Miles.that ther is no bertue at al in vois that is not farre greater and more verfet terbs. Vli. I would gladize that thou monibelt thew me this. Li. And I be five nothing els , and I will begon with Fottitube: whereof thou takelt fo muche have alozie, that thou caufest the felfa to be called a taker of cities , and a tamer of people: and not carving in thone enterprice, to winne with craftes and be ceinter lo that thou winner thou conerest tender the name of lagacitie, a warenes that that is in thee a most enul bice. Vis. Dhaome mone iniurve I mave thee. Li. I fay not fo, to fpeake of thee alone. wher fore parton me of thou thinke that 3 of fend thee: for 3 knowe well that all pon eftems winning to be a laudable thing. be it in what forte focuer it be, the whiche is not leamonalt be: wherev thou mant fe pal those wars y we make as wel amis geft our felues, as again tou , are made without any gyle or becett of our parte at al: and howe energe one of be trulling L.g.

tall.

b the

ee of

mre

to of

far

ont

hee-

upe

elfe

em

ba-

e at

bat

ne.

foo

ule

ebo

res

ige

itte

me

He

óg

CS

in his ofone frenath, felieth to revenue those in uries that are done buto bunt. not being buder any lawe at all . that inforceth him to bo it, nor fearing any pur milliomet. or differente for the not boing them. Vli. And who booth theme me that this is not anger rather then fortitube: Li. The maner that me ble in fight, where every one of bs , never fuffes ring him felfe to be onercome by the ener moe, makinge reliffaunce with all bis force, cuen to the uttermoft, without any abaffunente, or feare, either of pu withmente or of beath, feketh rather to Due fugiting then to be taken, and mener relange to the enemye, of with none other thinge, at the least with the minber the which thence theweth plainely that me mane not or put forth any petition towardes him at the leaft with fignes, on merafull or pittfull gettures : and after pet inben ine icle, (for it is not almaves seven to eache parte to winne) we fuffer our felues malt commonive to bue : no then further aut thou faite not funde that the Lyon foructh the Lyon, or the Bart

Ð

וצם

fe

th

131

ni

al

236

ti

p

U

1

l

1

1

85

Parte the Barte, as one man boeth an other, without caringe to be reputed : ferrefull and tyle. And tuberof commeth this, but of our inmincible and mightis monde? The which is farre more manifellip feene, when you take us, who abyte paciently hunger and thork: pea manpe of his fuster oute frines to bpe, then to remapne with you : willingly. preferring beath before bombage. Witherfore you are enforceb, luben pott will make any of his tame, to take of our: little pounglinges , who not knowinge: inhat they bo, fuffering you to febe them: familiarly by your bayne intifementes, lose at one time, with they, libertie, the fame firength of mond, and infines of bobpe (craftely to taken from therm by: you) that appertagne unto they; hynde. But wilt thou fee that nature bath gee neurope firength of barte to be then to pour for the bath made, us more pacient to beare paperes, and incommodities, then the bath bone you : and not onely the males, but also the females, makinge. them no leffe apte then the male to be fende L.ig.

UMI

epite

brut.

at in

ty pur

Doutg

DE 1110

fortis

de in

fuffe ence

H bis

thout

f.pm

er to

etter

HOHE

inbe

that

5, 03

ufter

aves

uffer

:: 00

od mi

the

fende both them and they? ponge; from miuries that might be bonne them... And thou the felfe, 3 knowe, balte often times feene, that the mare peldeth not to: the Pople, not the Ponde to the Parte, nether in courage, not pet in firength; neyther boo they as your females boo, who, whiles you fuffer troubles, and me curre the baungers of warres, or of fare lynge, or of other thinges necessarve to: the vie of man, fande pole by the free. tellinge of tales: by the whiche thinges: thou mapelt well percease, that this bere! tue of fortitube is founde more amonge. woode benties, then amonge men. Kather. I will lave further to thee, that that thep: whiche you call fortitude amonge you. is a fearefulnes with wifeborne, and not fortitude. For you never put your felnes: m anne baunger, and likewife pou nes mer fuffer any cuill, but to anopbe a greas ter: And be who suffereth any payne, to anopoe a greater, is called fearefull, and not fortiall. So that complayne you not of nature, though the bath not armed: . pour

#### The sprte Dialogue.

pour body as the bath done ource, withnaples, teeth,or with bornes, fonce pour of pour selues weaken so muche, the m caponnes and Arengthes of pour cous race. TVli. It is farbe for a pronerbe. that cuerpe argumente, agapuste the which nothing is lapd, is easily wonne. So that it is no meruaple, fince bitherto-I have laybe nothing against thee, pfit seme that thou hafte concluded, that beas Resare of moze might then manne: but thinke not for this, that I gene place to this thene opinion, but rather I lave to thee it is moofte falle: And that among gelt beaftes there is no fortitude at all, but onely amonge menne. And because thou matel fee that that 3 fap, is the pure and perfecte tructh, thou muste knowe that fortitude is a meane, determined with reasonne, between boltenes and feare, to cause of the good and the boneft, Howccan it then be founde among pour, spince pou baue not the subacment of read fon, that can funde this meane: Wibereby pou put no great trufte in those thinges, wherin L.uu.

UMI

cot; friber

te often

th mot to:

Barte,

trength;

les boo.

and me

tel fire

farre to:

be fore.

thinges:

his bed!

monge.

Kather

at thep:

pou.is

mb met

felues:

ou ner

a greas

me, to

I, and

ou not

armen:

. pour

bem.

#### Die forte Dialogue.

wherin truste shoulte be put : and thereface you become bold to runne into euery kind of daunger, without any confloeration, or else you seare lytte that, that should be feared: whereby von become fincrous, being afeard of every thinge: and fecontarely, because you have not the discourse of reason, whereby you might eyther knowe the good of the honest, and by occasion thereof, onely you put your selves in baungers: but you bout epther for protyte or for pleasure, or to revenge some inture. And this is not feetitude: for be who putteth him felf to great baun. gers by anger, by belighte, or by ignoraunce, w bestiall and tolife, and not for tiall. The which thinge chaumleth chiefhe to you, for that you knowe not which those thinges are, that should reasonably be feared, and leffe those, in the whiche trufte foulde inflely be put, Li.

Thou makest vs of very lyttle knowledge, yf thou beleue that we knowe not, that the yll is that that should be feared. The His frue that there are emiles, of the whiche a fortail man shoulde be

afcaro

afearde(but pet therfore not of all.) For there are of those, that he, who woulde bane no feare of them , should be a foole, and fhould beferve blame: as for eram ple, infampe, ponertie, and sutche like. Belides this vet, one fould feare nothing (bow borrible or cuill so cuer it appeared to be) for cause of the good, and the honet. And therfore be is called moofte fortiall that feareth not deathe, the whiche is moofie hourible of all, for that it is thenbe of lyfe. Potwithstandinge, this maketh not, that every kynde of beath must not be feared. Bo: the baning feare of the nav turall beath or of that that chaunfeth by fortune in the feator by other like occasi ons, maketh not that man can not bee fortiall. Then Chall be be fortiall, that shall not feare futche death, as shall be mooffe bonourable:as that is that chaunfeth in the warres, for honest occasion, or for defence of the countrep: the whiche beath is fo fame, that the people have op berned perticuler honoures to all those, that due by lyke deathe. Li. Who have leffe feare of death then we and this map L.b. cucrp

UMI

bere

ucty

(lide

that

ome

nge:

not

and

our

ther

nge ide:

un;

fo2s

ncf.

rich

blb

che

m

ot, ed.

be

CD

ouery man fee, that confidereth well our warres and boine mightely we befende bs, euch as long as euer we can without feare of any thinge. Vi. Thoughe it feme not that you have fere of beath, whe pou fyght, pet pou do it not for occasion of the honest, or of the good, but to represe the uniuries that are done buto pour or for the confernation of your felues, or of pour pondlinges or of fuch other thinges. whereby you beferve not for this, to be called fortiall, as it also chaunseth among he to them that put them felues to luffer it evther for love or to anophe povertie. or some like thinge: the whiche commeth not of us by our faulte: but rather thefe fuch are to be called fereful, for to avoide thinges paincfull, or to choose beathe to the lome milerie, or lome curli, and not for berna an boneff thinge, commeth of lacke of barte, and corage, and not of for titude. Li. Wilhat, fere not we verate uenture allo borrible and fearefull thing ges but a lytte: for we knowe not in our frabtings, and in our other doinges, any Doune

baumger at all. Vii. And therfine post are holde and not fortiall. For among horrible thunges, there are also of those that he who feareth them, can not be favo for this that be is not fortiall, as all those thouses are that paffe the might of man: as for crample, the orth quakes, the thunder bolt, and fuch like: the which are pet fuf fred alfo by the mighty, with a more feet fast upnde, then the others commonly Do. But even as the feare of every thing when there is no note, is a boor called fearefulnes, to also the not bauinge feare of any thinge, when, and as it behoueth, the which is thother extremutie, is a bree salled rathe boldenes : in the muttes of the inhiche timo ertremes fin buces are none other then extremes , that inflende euther in to luttle it on to muche fortis tube is but by reason, and therfore that shalfe fee that fortiall men will never put them felues in amp baunger, without forme reasou: for it should be to great a fole ive to benture the lufe, the whiche is the bearest thence: that manne bathe, but to fome honest enterpyple : and thep

Juokout

befende.

vithout

uabe it

th. whē

dien of

enselle

40, 00

som of

mges,

to be

mong

fuffer

ertie.

uneth

thele

uoibe

the to

d not

eth of

f foze

erate

time

Tur

Cun

ther ought much more to boit, thatare smolt wife as those that are most weather to line, for that they are moofte aute to beipe others. Wilherfore this name of for titube is not also genen amonge bs, to them that put thepe lines in baungers of warre for money, but onely to bun that soeth itsevether to befende his countrep. so for his owne bonefte, or for loke ho mest enterposics : newther are they also called fortiall, but lecherous, and coues teous, who either for immoderate belier of plefures, as of lone, as to possesse riches, eftence no baunger. Soo also they that bott for anger, or for ignorance, are called by be wefull and rathe. finallye be is melp futtall that feareth not beath, either for warring of boncley, or for the auove bing of fome bishonest thing: the which thinks can not be in von , for that you have not reason (as 7 to be thee before) that may geue right indgemente therof. Li. Call not vou also those fortiall, who confirmined by the lawes, to gette fome bonour in they? citic, put them schues to many

many baungers: Vii. Pe, but they are not fortiall in bede, though they seme bery lyke. For the manne that is fortiall in bede, doth the bedes of fortiade, first and principally for the love of vertue, and let et after followe as it will: and these do it evither to not glorve, or profite.

Li. And they that are very experte and ballant in warres, bo pou not allo cal the fortall? Vli. De, but this vet us a fortie tude somewhat bnaptly named, & mucho morfe then those others, for it commeth of arte and of ervertence, the which teas cheth thee to burte others, and to be cabe thy felfe, and not of election guyded with reason'as the true fortitude. The which also thou must note, that although it be erercisco both about suertie, and feare. pet it confisteth more about terrible and fearefull thinges: for he that in this . avuerneth him felse in fuch fort as is conuenient, beferueth moze to be called forth all, then be that both it about those thenges, in the which man thould truft, being much more case to abstaine from pleas

fures, then to bere griefes. And although

the

atare

12thre

ote to

of fm

s, to

ers of

t that

trep,

e ho

alfo

cottes

elier

bes,

that

cale

be in

ther

יעםנו

buch

pott

ince)

rof.

oda

mè

s to

unp

the factial man in fuffering many there aes that channee buto bim fele fometime bery great griefe, pet the ende that he be freeth of beinginge to passe some bonck enterprise femeth unto him to fwere and to pleasaunt, that be paciently beareth them, and all to gether with a free mind. from all fente. Li. Blilles 3 will tell the true, thefe your boinges even as thou fapelt) to do them perfectly, hane nede of to many confiderations, and of to manve circumitaunces, that you fould bery felbeme bo them: and afterward, they must get the name of being perfect, by the bni nerfall opinion, with the which he who can freake belt, is thought to freake most true. Wilbereforett is not thus to belene the in enery thing: I thinke once there is muche more fortitude amonge bs, then amonge you, and that we bo the workes thereof, with far leffe difficultie then pon do. So that perswade me no moze that I Chould become man agune, for I will remaine thus a Lion: and thanking the for the good will, I will take leave of thee:for I will go to finde my company ons

etime be be onel eanb areth ninb. ll tell thon De of anve pfel muft bni who mof lette reis tben 2kcg then noze 02 3 ting le of

The forte Dialogue. and PIC See holve that the know ledge of this felow is: for be knoweth no thing but the operations, in boin much as they procede from the bobie, and not from the minde, whereby be calleth was hes of fortitude, those that are onely inclinations, and naturall motions, with out any election or reason . Let bim then remaine thus a bealt without reason.aut I will feke, who (confibering a little farther within, then the bode ive parte ancip) beferneth more to retourne man, then this felowe bothe. (:)

ang

# The feventh Dialogue.

Circes, Aliffes, the Pople.



Hat doest & here thus alone Whitese what thinkes thou on, that thou standes thus musinge? Vii. The beautie of the place, a the pleasauntnes of

thefe shabowes, were the thrnges that proughed me firme to tell in thes place: and then afterward I flaved here , thonkong bowe fewe thole me are, that know them selves perfective, or that seke to knowe, whiche parte of them is the most noble and best part. The which thona is even so necessarve to bim, that befps reth to obteine the true ende (the which enery one naturally despreth) that worth out the same, it is impossible to arroue butoit. for the which cause there bath bene waitten by our wife men in manve bonozable places of our Gretia, this good lecton : Knowe the Celfe . Cir . And whereby

wherby gatherest thou, that ther are few that knowe theym selves! vli. Bo their workes: for (as thou knowell) man is made of two natures, the one corporall and earthre, and the other heavenly and Deuvne: with the one of the which be is lpke to brute beaftes, and with the other to those immateriall substaunces of turne the beauens. This last should be much moze let by, by him then the other, bemet the better parte: notwithstanding, all menne almost forgetting it, attende to the other, which is the bodye, and they make none accompte but of that onelpe, and that they feke to becke, and to make most happpe, and most eternall that they can. Cir. I have pet heard thee lave, that in the Gretia there are manve wple menne, the which feke onely fciences and bertues, to make this part perfect, that thou fapelt is in them the best parte . Vi. It is true but in respect of those that at tende to the wealth, and to the pleasures of the bodge, they are most feine: and of thefe alfo, the most parte, seke bertue for the benefites fake of the body, boping to 39.L. be

UMI

e thus

tohat n.that

thus

The

lace, e

es of

s that

place:

thone

wons

ke to

most

bvng

delps thich

opth:

True

bath

anne

doop

And

rehp

he able afterwardes therwith to procure ento them mo comodifies and pleafures. and thefe truelve deferue not to be called bertuous, not feking bertue for it felf and because it is good , but to get therby some gaine, for the principal defire of our foule is the knowing the truth: and the accasion of thurges, to quiet it felfe there in , as in his ende , and not to get oute therof commodities to the bodye, as they boo, who knowing nothing but that in them only never thinke on other thing. then of the benefites of the fame: inhere by afterward al the mileries. and al f bus maine infelicaties growe. Cir. Aliffes 3 thought that this litle time, that thou will remaine with me, thou wouldest baue bestowed in those pleasures whereof this mp fo faire and pleafaunt Island aboundeth:proudked pf by none other thinge, pet by the continuall spring, the which is ever in this place, and by that fuertpe, and by those delughtes, that thou feelt fo manve binerfe beaftes take the one with the other that goo all the bave without any fuspitio, a sporting by these my fayre and

procure and grene littell woodes, after the forts leafures. of those first times, so much celebrate by to be cal pour Poetes, in the which, discorde, and for it felf hatred were not vet comen into p world: and thou standest all the day musinge. noive under the shaboine of some tree-on a Cone, now by the waves of the Sea, 16 the mind to farre beowned in unaginations, that thou femelt onto me almost a bodpe without a foule : and whereas 3 would thinke that thou shouldest be als waies mery, both for the qualitie of the place that requireth it, & for the love that I bear to the b makeft me ofte bout that thou half fome forow within the that continually bereth thee . Vli. Se also howe thou Circes thinkelt of nothing but of the body, and of pleasures, and delightes of the fame, neither ball thou any know ledge of the pleasure that is gotten in be bolding the lecretes of most wife nature. kevinge eucr barbe to the earth, with the bandes of the bodge, that parte that Mould be lifte by even botto beven: wber as beholdinge those dume substaunces. M.u.

UMI

t therby

re of our

and the

e there

ret oute

as thep

that in

r thing,

mheres

al & bus

liffes 3

ou wilt

E baue

eof this

houns

binge,

Which

ertpe.

feelt so

e with

itbout

fappe

and

he thould fele other pleatures, then thele earthip pleasures are, that thou esterness to much, for those pleasures of the mind, are farre greater, then those of the body: and marke what 3 fage , pf 3 coulde obtaine to caule to retourne men , foure of these Gretians, that have bene by the transfourmed unto beattes, and to leade them againe with me, I woulde thinks to have so much glospe, and honor there fore, with my wife men of Gretin (the whiche thing although be sippery and mortall, is put among the welthes of the minde)that I should have more pleasure therof, and more contentation, then of al the plefures of the body that ener I could finde, either bere of in any other place. Cir. of thele thy totle men of Bretia , be to few as thou failt, in respect of thothers this thy glory thould be very finale, and not to be much estemed: for that others should not knowe the glozious bedes that thou thoulvest bo, because they know not howe muche manne is more noble then beattes. Pli. Rather cleane contrary: for it is farre better to be praised by one onely

21

C

f

2

-

1

1

ì

#### The feuenth Dialoge

onely, who also is prayled bun selfe by many, then of an bundeed others, of inho even the name oncly is not knowen. Cir. And wherof commeth it then that thou obtainest not the desier : halte thou found none vet that will become manne agarne: Vli. Bo: for all they with whom I have bitherto fooken ar of those who wholes they were men, neuer knew them felues, noz never knewe their owne valure, but they attended onely to the boove-and to the benefites of the fame : and because thus beattes they thinke to finde mo commodities, and benefites, apperterning to the conferuation and good bes vng of the bodie: thinking nothinge at all of the benine and relectiall parte, they rather remarne thus beaftes. Cir. those be so fewe in number that knows this dimmitte, that thou lavelt you bave within you, it is no merualle that thou halt not chaunced on any: but if this des fore frame thee fo much, forfake not the enterpaple, for it can not be, that thou find not fome one of those, that is of thene opis nion: for thou knowell howe diverse the M.ivi. wittes

en theie

Cemest

e mind.

e body:

alde ob

dure of

by the

o leade

thinke

there

a (the

rp and

of the

eafure

nofal

could

ia , be

thers

-and

thers

s that

n not

then

tarp:

one

melp

ace.

wittes of man are, and I in this means time (for that I take no belite in thefe the speculations) will go passing the time in thefe ballers according to my wonted cu frame. Vii. And I will not favle to fol lowe that that I mooft minde: for if I fynd but one of those that knoweth the moblenes of man(for the which thinge be descrueth to be put in the number of the wife, the knowing him selfe, beinge the fraft fruite of wisebome)and that I may reffee him to the verfecte bernge, I fhall not think to baue fornt my time in baine: fince one benefite that is done to a wife man, is farre better placed, then all those are, that ever may be done to a thousand fooles. Se ponder coming towardes me a bery farze Bosse: oh what a fap:e beaft it extruely nature belides man, bath put all ber knowledge in this: the beholdings bim bath taken me in fuch fort, & 3 would bester that he, who was channged into bim, had ben a Gretian, that I mucht boo bun this benefite: Wherfore I will aske bim. Hople, tell me I prape thee, what countricman were thou, before thou wer thus

## The fewenth Dialoge

is meane thus made by Cv2ccs: Ho. 3 was & thefe the Gretian whiles I was a man:but whoe e time in boef thou aske me this! Vli. To make ontebeu thec retourne man, of thou be there with contented: for Cyrces bath graunted me power to bo it and after to take thee out weth the of this bondage, gening the libertic, either to retourne into the countre, or to go whis ther thou lift best. Ho. This wil I not that thou bo: for, fo much as I loucd the bepng man , and not a beaft, whiles I was a man: so much it woulde greue me, now that I have proved this other lyfe, to retourne from a bosfe to a man. Vli. And for what cause:tell it me I may thee, pf it please thee: for this is farre contrary to that that humaine reason geucth. Ho. Because I finde in this state many fewer thinges that might lette me to lyue quietly, and to obterne that perfection, and that ende, that apperteeneth unto my kynde, and to my nature: the whiche brode not wholes I was man, in that that belonged buto man. Hi. 3 knowe well that thon arte a beaff, that cannel be bery well without the governance 99.uy. and

UMI

ple to fal For if 7

binge be

er of the

inge the

asm E

3 Chall

1 baine:

a wife ull those

ouland

smea

east it th put

loinge

dinoui

d into

bt doo

afke

wbat wer

thus

and helpe of be, and that without be you halo line very buhappely. Ho. Pe, thole young ones that you bringe by, who has uing loft by the meanes of your entiling flatterp, that fearfenes that they natural ly have, can not afterwarde lyue without pourbut not I, that was never binder your gouernaunce : wherby I line freely, as thou feelt, goping freely inhether fo euer it pleaseth me, without any suspition, or feare at all. Vii. And haft thou any other occasion then this: Ho. Thunkelt thou not this prough, to be leffe let from being able to bo that, that belongeth to our nature, then you are? Vi. And in what fortitel it me I pray thee, for I of my felfe can not buberfrand it. Ho. Jam contented Thou knowell that there are two occasions, the which let both you e be, that we bo not that, that belongeth to g nature of sche of bathone is, the feare of the things that may burte be, and thother is, the be lote and pleafure that those thinges geue thee, that please . And these two thinges plucke very often backe, both you and be, and that of the thould bo, tourning our full and

t be vou e-those inho ba entilina atural. pithout er vour elv, as fo ever ion, or pother t thou beina ur nas mbat p felfe tented JESSO at ine inas be be acue nges D bs. Livil and

and your appetite (the which are the beaut minges of vour operations & ours)fro that that they should seke abasbing the so with fear or milling them with pleasures. Vii. Wihat menell thou by this! Ho. Werken buto me and thou fhalt buterfrand it. The one of thefe two unperunentes, the which es feare, taketh fortitude away, the which fortitude fuffreth not others to have feare of fearefull thinges, to bung to passe that that fould be:and the other temperaunce that fuffereth not any to take ouer much belyte, of those thinges that please, the inhich cause the to do that that they should not do . Both these thinges let bs muche leffe then they do you, from those operate ons that are convenient for you. And this is, because we have farre moze fortitube. and moze temperaunce then you baue: with thone of the which we reframe that part of our appetite, the which rou cal ire ful, that the fame fereth not fearful thing ces to much not trusteth to much in those thinges that it bath. And with the other. the concupilcence, wherby it followeth not ouermuch those thinges that bying belite, M.v. 1102

not fiveth those to muche that beinge it foroive. And so havinge these pattions more moderate in be, we must boo farre more eafliver that that appertenneth but to our nature, then you bo that that belone aeth to vours. TVli. I would saye m debe that thou were fone, if thou couldeft moue buto me that thefe were more perfecte in you then in bs. Ho 3 will not trauaple at all in talking of fortitude: For it is to manifest a thing, that your wais ters I speake not of Poetes to whom it is lawfull because of delectation to save fometimes that that is not, but the historiographers, inhole duety is onely to lave the trueth) when they will fave that forme man is most strong, they liken bim buto a Loon, or to a bull, or to fome loke beaff: and when they will speke of our frenath. they never liken it to that of a ma. And fro inbence commeth this but because of thep knowe that we are far more from then Vli. This is luftines of boby vou are. e not fortitude it felfe . D I fe wel this fellow is also one of those, who knoweth no thing, but the benefites of p body. Ha. And from

-

b

1

2

1

4

1

from whence commeth the Arenath of the body, but from that of the minde: Vi. De, buto bun who bath a monde that can perceine it. Ho. And me are of those who have mundes most apte to perceave it: for that the baue it much leffe trobled, by hauing fewer passions then you have. Vli. And what are those passions, that you have not as we have: Ho. Avil al those thinnes that arowe of thinges palt, or of thur res to come: Because we knowe not that that is present to us, nor foresee that that is to come. Vi What vallions growe also of these to be: Ho. What passoner poeff not thou knowest ? feare and bope: feare of those thinges that displease thee. and hope of those that please thee . and as also gladnes, and forroive, to by those thmas that are viclent buto ther and that belite thee . 12 by those that are against the minde. And these very often kepe vour mind broutet and thoughtful, in fuch fort that they fuffer you not to boo that that apperteemeth to a fortiall man : and from thefe foure fring after, as from one bead, all the others. But let be nade over surther, buto that that taketh away the

UM

vince it

Daffions

o farre

eth bn-

t belone

fave un

ouldest

e per-

xill not

e: For

r ingi

born it

o fave

hifto:

lave

forme

bnto

eaff:

ratb.

o fró

thep

then

adod

fele

no

ant

com

impedimentes, the whiche fuffer by not to worke rightly, by the occasion of be lyte, or of pleasure, the which is temper raunce. Walte thou bemy me that we are not farr more temperate then you, not on ly in belectations and pleasures, but also in ariefes and malincolies of the minder Dea, I will benve it in bebe: for that vou are farre more quibeb by the fence, then we be. Ho. Rotivithitanbinas if thou confider the maner of our living, thou thalt fee by experience the contrary: and of thou wilt berken buto me, 3 will thewe it thee. Vii. I mave thee hartely: for I before nothing elfe. He. Thou knowest that temperancelas I have told the) is erercifed about troubles, and about belectations: But because it is farre moze barbe to abstarne from pleasures, then to be moverate in bifuleafures, I will foufte freake of this:and because the greatest be ivtes and those that mone be moulte-are they of benus we will begin with them. where I will that thou bethinke thee a le tle what kund of ours, thou half ever fene to be occasion bereof, the immesurable follies

におけ

1

2

1

1

follies that von barly bo. For though we alfo feke to quentibe this befire, vet falto thou not see, after that the female bath conceined, neither that the feketh after vs,no we after ber. And befices this, we neither become their fernauntes, no vet for this occasion lose one woint of our bes are as you bery often to : for fometymes you love to unbaidledly, that clene forget ting your noblenes, you put your felues to ferue them like flates . And bowe may nve baue there bene among you, that baue for this cause-lefte the care of theve children-a thing to wicked that it never chaunced into our mindes to do it, whiles they baue nede of our governaunce) and without any respect either of honestie. of substaunce, baue by like occasions. become the frame of the people, and bep uen afterward most bylely to prouide for them felues wherewith to line. I will not speake of those fins so many bokes to pour great fhame are full thereof) whoo by like passions, have let them selves to wite every their most smale thought, althoughe it were fithy e out of that, that reason

UMI

by net

tempe

meare

not on

nt alf

minder

of that fence.

apriide

mina.

trary:

Histi F

rtelve

Lbon

etola

rbout

Maze

en to

palte

ft de

are

em.

ale

fene

able Lies

## The fewenth Dtaloge.

reason requireth, blusteringe absoade to others their thamefull betires, evther in profe or in rime, or finally that have by the occasion ronne unto some foule beth: it luffileth that you versionabe your selves that beautie is a dinine thing, e that love being a belire thereof, is a thinge lauba ble, buting with that spirituall beautie, that is thought to be in Goo, that little grace-the whiche the well proportioned bodies baue: and covered with well made colours, and with the name of the delpre of that, the which is one of the frafte perfections of your foule, you broe this your bumame paffon. I fave bumame, bus cause in be, it never falleth so unbridledly and to continually, but farre more mode rate, and in those times only that nature bath orderned for the maintenaunce of the kinde. Vii. So that we fee not von allo bo a thoulande follies, by the like oc casion! Ho, And what see you be bo! but thone of be to become formetime forms inhat enemy to thother: the which commeth of geloipe, that is a common pathi on that grometh alway together, to this. Delire .

Del

fea

at.

R

fee

tre

Des

for

ha

th

th

bp

th

m

th

th

th

221

fo

6

p

8

to

ti

2

desire. But I would not reason bereof. fearing least thou shouldest distance there at the thinges are so wicked and abbominable that sometimes it leadeth to bo. Rede the bistories a litle, and thou Chalte fee-bowe many deceites , bow much bas tred, bow many treasons, and bow many deathes, as well of swoods, as also of pop fon (the whiche is a more foule thringe) have arowen in the worlde by this . Soo that I will lav it a fide and palle ever to those pleasures that grow by eating, and by winkinge. Where thou shalte finde that what beaft foeuer thou wilt, as well bilde, as tame, is farre more moderate then you. For thou shalt not finde anve, that at any time eateth or bunketh more then be neverbanoz that leketh for other meates, then those that were ordeined for him by nature: some sede some graffe. some fleshe, and some fruite. Whereas pou not conteted with one only, eat of al, and more over you cause diverse thonges to be brought fro every part of the world to eate. And not contented berewith. you also seke with arte, that they map

De to

er ur

e bv

eth:

lues

lotte

uda

itie.

ttle

meb

tabe

fp2e

pers

our

bos

dlo

De

ure

of

me

DCS

90%

m

m

Die

NE .

ire

may gene you more belight, then it hathe pleafed nature to put in them. Whereby mainen by the pleasure forth of the rule that the bath genen you, you take more therof then your nede requireth, and you make fo many biforders, that you beftrop bery often the complexion, procuringe pour felnes either a most thoat lofe, or a troublefome and ficke age . Df Donkens nes wherein vou fall sometimes, suffes ringe your felues for a little delighte that as in the winc, to lefe that thing, whereof pou glospe pour selues aboue all other beaftes, I will far nothing : for that you are fo albamed therof, that of your owne felues, you are wont to fap, that he that is bronken, deferucth double punishment of the fautes that he committeth. for be first deserveth that punishment, that the faulte is woorthye of, and after warde, that punishmente that the sufferinge the wine to take from him the discourse of reason deserueth, by the meanes of the whyche thinge he is fallen into that errour. So that marke finals tre, whether we be not more temperate a much.

then von . And whether our chaunce be not farce better then poures, we bauin & smuche greater parte then you , of that berthe the which taketh from others. thole unpedimentes, that fuffer not to marke according to nature. Vli. Truly. be that will loke only to certaine your operations, without confidering thenbe. mould fave that you wer farre more trme perate then we, the which thinge, as 3 will thewe thee, is altogether most falle: and for that thou maich be fure thereof. thou must bnderstand; that temperance is an elective habite, made with realite reason the which causeth that he , who bath it nether altereth or moveth to much for the thinges that displeaseth him , noz is to much drouned in the belight of those that please him, and this kind of habite is exercised (as is said) much more about Delectations, the about griefes, but there fore not about al: for temperaunce is not aboute the pleasures of the minde, as a boute boneftie, the delvatt of the under Standing, and fuche like, noz pet aboute all those of the bodye: for he is not called A.i. butem

it hathe

Chereby

the rule

se more

no vou

destrop

curinge

fe, ora

onken:

, luffes

te that

bereaf

other

at pou

omne

be that

bment

. #O2

t,that

after

t the

n bim

m the

is fals

final:

erate

much.

batemperat, that taketh great plefure of thinges that appertaine to the fight, as victures, images, and lpke thinges are: and much leffe be that taketh belighte of thole thinges that belong to the bearing. as boices and foundes are : and fo alfo be that delighteth of fanours, if it be not far respect of fobe, as it chaunseth to pou beafes, as the dogge for an erample both. that taketh onely belyght of the finell of the Bare, for that he bopeth to eate ber. Then refteth that this bertue be only ereraled about the belectations of the talt. and of the felinge: and allo 3 will lave, further buto the, that the pleasure of the touchinge is onelpe his objecte, for that the taffe is a kinde of touchinge, and that this is true, le bowe be, to whom wine was to pleafaunt, required the Gods that they would make bin a longe necke like the cranes: for that the pleasure that the wine gave him by touching, thorough a longer space, might endure the more, and be greater. He. And to what ende faiest thou this!

vii. Harken a little pf it please the, thou

1

# The Quenth Dialogne.

most also marke that manne bath the the Arument of this sence more perfect then and other beatte. Ho. And howe was west then this ? Vli . Marke : All the ergaines and members, luberin the fens fations are made, must be cleane boide. and naked of all their objectes, foralingch as nothing can take againe, that that it hathe: and therefore it behoueth that the eve haue no coloure in hin felfe at all, no the tafte like wife faugure: other wofe thone should fee enery thing of that color be had in bimfelf, as it is to bim, who los keth thorough a glaffe of fomme coloure) and thother shoulde fele energe thinge of that fanoure whereof he bab altered the tafte as be booth who bath made that place butter, where the taft is mate, by some coterike aque, buto whom everye thinge feemeth bitter . Ho . This is most true, but I fee not pet to what ende thou favelt it . Vli . I fave it . bes cause the infirumentes, in the whyche the touchinge is mate, whether they be fonowes, flethe, at fkonne, B.t.

UMI

hre of ht, as as are: thte of uring, also be not for u bear

both, nell of e ber. ip ertast,

laye, of the that

that wine that

e like it the

noze, what

thou mult

it can not come to to palle, because There - objectes are chiefelpe the firste qualities: that is to fave , beate , withe , coloe , and mailture: they being made of fours ele anentes, can not be altogether boobe of them. Ho. How bo they then to perceive them, receiving them agapne into them, if they have them ! whi. They fele but onely the ercelle, of the lacke of them, that is to fav, onely those thinges, that are more or leffe, bote, colbe, bre, or morte then thep: and therefore be that hath the fell and the skinne most temperate, Chall have his fence belt, for be hall fele the more enery most litte beffe rence: and thefe we men are, (who as it is molt fure)baue more temperat complers ion then any other beat : whereby it for ·loweth that we have this fence more perfecte and that we fele greater belyghte in the operations of the fame, then you Doo. So that it should be no marmaile. we feling greater pleasure, of we also were leffe temperate : but I graunte thee not this . He . Wilhat : wolfe thou Denve me, that we luffre not our selves to

to

8

D

tl

t

b

11

a

a

to be lette brawen by thefe pleasures then ' you, feing experience contrary at all to mese Vli, I will graunt thee that you abstarme more from vicafures.and troble pour felues leffe by foromes, then we oo, farre more easely:but not vet that it com meth of temperaunce. Ho. And who: Because (as I have tolde thee)tems Vli. veraunce is an elective habit, made with a right biscourse of reason : howe can you then bane this bertue in von ! toute not! bauing realon, by the which you thenive: determine juhat this habite is and what that meane is by the whiche pon thoulde: not creete in fosowing, of in takinge bes light of those thinges, without the whiche the kinde Chould not be maraterned: for the which cause so areat oclectations have biene put by nature, in those thinges that maynteine the indeution, as is the cature: and the drinking, and in those that, maine terne the kinde as the thmaes of Wennis are, pou can not afterward also chose fres lpe, because you be autoed in all vour opes rations by nature, and not of to much by Then from THO. bertie as we are. inbence. A.W.

te Them alities: de, and ure eleophe of to perne into
Whey acke of ninges,

pro-of

be that

A tem

for be

e duffe

as it is

mplers

y it for the perlyghte en you ruaile,

ve also raunte e thou

felues to

tobence come their effectes of temperance in bs, that are fuch as thou canfi not bemy them, of we have them not! Pli. from an infinction that nature bath gene pou: tobo knowing that you are not of fo perfecte knowledge, that von of your felues can choose that, that is belte to; rour confernation, bath canfed that von can nevi ther eate, not brinke, more then your nede requireth: not also, so to ble superfluous ipe anne thenge, whereby pour burte of corruption should growe. And this is not temperaunce, wherento belongeth frely, neither to be to forowfull for those thin, ges that are not convenient, not to take to mutche belyabte of thoole thynacs that are conveniente and to boo all thin mes with measure, and when time is.

No. Pl we bo all those felse thinges that you saye, whether it be by nature, of it be by temperaunce, it is sufficient so, bs.

Vi. If this were true, it should also followe, that the being led by force, to some unde, shoulde be better, then the goynge freely and willingly therevate. Ah, these are servile, and of vile mindes; retourne

then

th

th

th

nt

m

re

fa

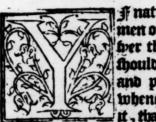
erance then retourn man, and into the state that thou were before, and come with me into He. 3 will not graunt thy countrey. thee this: for although I can not befend mp reason as thou bolt, pet it maketh not that I knowe not that this bernge is so muche better then yours, that I will not remapne thus a beafte. Vis. If thou be then fully thus betermined, remaine thou le a beafte fill : for truely thou beferueft none other beyng then this, fince thou fufferest the felfe to be fo much gui bed by the fence, that thou remembreff no more the habte of reas fort.

ot bemp From e pou: so per felues ar conn neps rnebe fluous urte or is not freip. e thins o take vnges ll thm. S. es that

at be og. lo fo forme ovnge thele ourne then

# The eight Dialogue.

Mides, the Dogge.



If nature (as our tople men of Gretia lave) defiver that every things should come to his ende and perfection: from whence then commeth it, that the bath geven t

b

a

5

u a att

....

1

fo great power, to these our senses, that they drawe continually but the earthe, this our mynderand kepe it almosses alwayes occupied in these earthlye thinges (as it is with this fellowe that was chaunged into an horse, with whom I spake even nowe) so that we are lytle different from brute beastes: who, so, that they have they, ende in the earth, were all made by nature, with they, face tourned towardes the same, and man onely with the face tourned towardes heven, to geve him to understande, that he shoulde continually lyst by him selfe therebuto: and behol-

# The eyght Dialogue.

beholvinge the operations of those bes nine lubstaunces, to obterne a felicitie that maketh bim more then a man. But what would this Dogge, that commeth thus towardes me and being by lyttle and lytle commen nigh me, flanbeth then fo fivil: Truely be should have done it willingly, fololoung his nature, the which as very frendly to man, and for that he thould fee them very feldome in this place. 3 beleue, pea rather 3 know it for a fuers tie, because experience bath taught it me, that nature bath gene be thefe fences, that are not necessary to the maintenaunce of our life, onely for our better being, and to make our knowledge more perfectie there by it commeth, that they so encline to the earth, where they have they? objectes this our better part: the which (if they wer not) would by her sione nature toft by her felf continuative to beanen. Alas lee holve this Dogge taketh pleasure in beholving me and marke if it feme not, by the delittres that be maketh, wholes I teason thus with my felfe, that he understandeth all A.b.

UMI

elam's

pe)De

binge

Bende

from

uneth

genen , that

arthe, Ite al-

thin!

t inas

em 3

le Dif

2 that

ere all

urned

with

geue

e con-

:and

## The epght Dialogue.

that I fave . truely be canne not have bonne it for any other cause, but for that the bariannce that is between thone part and thother, brebeth in be greater wares nes, and better biligence, whereby our bertue commeth to be more manifelt: the whiche confesteth not onelye in harbe thunges, but also us continualize made more luftie and more perfecte. what will this Dogge with me, that he maketh to much of me ? ba , ba. D howe frendely and faythfull is this beafte to man. Dogge. Bep gentle knight tell me inbether thou be of Itaca, of Gretia, as the freache themethine. Vli. Gretian, and Itaca is my countrey in bebe. Do. I knewe thee by thy tongue: for enery nation bath a perticuler pronuntiation, that none other canne baue tt so perfectipe, that is not of the same countrep:and I Caped, reiopling to bane founde one of my countrep: but it greatly greneth me, that thou balt not obternes the fame felicitie that 3 haue. Vis. And what felicitie is these

Do.

4

## The eyght Dialogue."

90. That thou art not transfourmed by Crices into forne beafte as 3 am. Callest thou it a felicitie to be mabe of a man a beaft? Do we that 3 boo. and thou alle mouldest save it, of thou habbelt proned it as I have: and of thou beleue it not, heare me, and 3 wyll make thee moof fare theroft vli, have on; for any parte, belier none other thinge. For I laboured with Cvices, to make poù retourne men: he whiche, beung asthou favelt. I will no more tramavle therein. Do. Well me forft the name, of it please thee. Vli Do name is Wirles, and mine ererafe once was learninge and aftermarbe warres. Do. 3 am foo muche the glabber to weake with thee, for that thou were er ercifed in two of the mooth noble artes that are in the worlde. And my name was Cleantos, and 3 also once gaus my felie to learnynge, and afterwards leaninge that, thoughe not altogether, pet partely, for that I was berve spece, I gave my felfe to lyng pole

Do.

bane that

e part

p our

t:the

harte

But

at he

home

te to

ia, as

ama

tey in ague:

: page

baue fame

baue

eatip

pnes

# The eight Dialogue.

pole, as the more part do, butill fuch time as one day arriving here, 3 was trans fourmed by Cycesias thou feeft into a Dogge, of the which being I content my felfe far better, then I bid of that of man. Pli. But 3 loke after, or rather moft ernellip befrer thee, that thou tell me, for what cause thou indgest, that your berng 16 better then ours: Do. 3 am contented Mipfles, and I will begin with the bertues, of the which you never ceafe to klos ry your felues, even as though pour palled all other beattestas of Justice; of fontitube, of temperaunce, and of al other bers tues. But 3 will fraft that thou aunfliver me to this . Which ground beferneth to be most mapled, enther that, enhabys ted by the Ciclopes, the which is laybe to bring forth of all kind of cornerand fruite by ber ofone naturall goodies, without being fimen, laboured, at lulled for any meanes by men : or that grounde of our barren and bolly Itaca, fravcily apte to feve gotes: the which though it be tylled with mothe biligence is frhatren, thet it never peloeth other then a most pose harucft

1

í

1

1

1

í

t

1

t

The eight Bialogue?

meltings it never geneth to those that las bour it iust reward of their pames : 18nt fee that berein thou fet aparte the lone of the country. Mi. Howe can I far that that land of the Ciclopes is not to be mai fed more, being fo fertile, (although 3 aupded by nature love mine owne couns tree better) if 3 will not say butruely Do. And the fame thou fouldest confesse to me of the foule, who in this is lyke to the earth: praising those soules moofe. inho methant any findy as labor, bryng footh of them felues, the good and perpecte eperations . Fli . And this allo 3 confesse to be true. Do. Then thou grauntest me that the soules of beaftes. who of them felues, without any labour or fludy, haping forth bertues, are far bet ter, and more noble then poures. Wilby, what pertues are these that bear ftes of their owne nature are endued with .Do . far greater then those , of the which ma is becked with art. And if thou wilt feke this diligently, let be begin with that that is the first and principal of them all. Vii. And whyche is that?

Do.

time

rang

ntoa

t mp

man.

ft ers

e, foz

epna

mteb

ber-

Hos

affeb

fortie

e bers

Aper

meth

habus

ibe to

ruite

thout

any

f our

te to

plied

beit is

ebar=

uct

## The eight Dialogue.

Do. Willebome, withoute the whicher there can be no bertue at all. For bertue being none other thing then a meane betwene two extremities, beternined with full reason, it followeth thereby that there can be no bertue without infebome.

For that meane that is a vertue, is not like the arithmeticall mibbes, that confi-Ateth of like farnes from his extremes, as to(for an example)in the continual onatis tie. the centre of the circle: from the whi che centre as many lines as thou wilte. mainen to the circumference ar al equal: at as the fire is between two and tenne in seperate quantitie, the whiche is as farre billaunte from the one as from the other. But it is like the geometricall und des, the which is distaunt from his ers tremes by a fimilitude, or els a reasona ble proportion, as for erample: the fire is between nine and foure, where it conteis meth once & a balfe the four and is conterneb once and a balfe like wife by the nine: Wilherhy it is faid to be a middes between thone & thother, by proportio of reason: so allo the mittes, in the which bertue confi Meth

1

L

b

Di

tr

ca

be TI

Do

(au

an

90

no

WI

Da

me

rai

PO

pili

of

bea

The enght Pralogue.

feth, not being put betwene bis erfre mes by equall beltaunce, after the fine litude of the Arithmetricall middes . It bes boueth that a bertue betermine it . accorbinge to a reasonable proportion of ertremes to the fimilitude of the geometris call middes: and this bertue to inhom it belongeth to betermine it . is wifebome. Then there can be no vertue mout inife dome and therefore it is reasonably take. for the rule and foundation of al:and this (as 3 have tolde thee) is found farre more among bs, then among von. Fli. And mbo themeth me that this is true! Do. Reason: tell me I pray the, doest thou not graunt me, that the babites are know men by the meanes of the operations? Vli. De that 3 bo, for it is true. Do. Then halte thou also grannt me, that we are more wife then pout, fins we do our over rations, farre more wifely, then vou bo yours . And that this is true, thou fhalt proue it, by thine owne felfe: confidering diligentive the operation of enery one of oure kindes, beginning at the leffer bealtes: where first thou thait fee the ant to

biche

ertue

re be

with

there

s not

anon

cs,as

náti!

inhi

vilte.

qual:

enne

is as

n the

mb

s ers

fona

ireus

nteis

inter-

nine:

wen

m: fo

anti

Aeth

# The eyght Dialogue.

to be to wife, that be laieth up in fummer, all that that be nebeth in winter: and the foiders lay their frares with bery great confideration to take certain little beattes to febe them on : and the Walves , and many other tike , to hibe the felues onder the earth, at those times that are burtfull to them, I will fay nothing to thee, of the most wife governaunce of the bees, for that there are to many among you, toboo baue confirmed their belt yeares in Discribinge their life, and the manoure how they governe them felues. Then go to the burdes and thou Malt fee them all to chaunge their place time by time, as it is fit for their nature : thou thalt fee of those, who knowing them schies briant to bring by their pounge, cause them to be covered and nourifled by an other as the Cockow, thou thalt fee of those, who bouting that the poung the whiche they bane beed thould be none of theirs , bane with most areate wisebonne founde the meanes to be affured therof, as the Cale, who turneth their eies to the rapes of the fonne. I well also patte ouer weth fcps lence

# The eyght Dialogue.

lence, the wifedome of the Cranes, that rule them felues foo ordinately buber the principalitie of pone of them and bolos Toben the others take their reft , be onely Standeth with his bead alofte, to take bede to the others, bolding a frome with the one of his fete for that he woulde not Meape, and hearing any thinge, be the to eth them Araighte therof . The Wartrid ges, what wifedome ble they in defeding their poung from the fowlers: the alba let them felues before, till the other baus time to escape. The Swallowes, when they can find no durte to fallen toacther those little splintars of wood, or of strawe. tuberof they make their neftes, ( for they male them in fuch forte as you do pours honfes) have not they fo much wifeboms that they washe them in water, and tume blinge them afterward in the duffe, they make it eue as you make mozter:then in beinging by of their young, howe great follebonie doo they ble, in caulinge that encry one may baue his part of the meat. and in getting forthe of all the filthe of the neast for that they should lye cleane: The D.i.

mmer.

and the

o areat

bcaites s and

s bnder

urtfull

bee, of

e bres.

g veu,

arcsin

anoure ben go

em all

me, as

fee of

bnapt

bem to

er as

, who

be thev

-baue

de the

Cale,

ofthe

th Ccps

lence

The englit Dialogue.

The Pre, when the perceiveth that her egges haue bene feene, what wvfebome weth the in chaunging them? banging timo at a time at a little twigge with the Sensy matter that commeth out of bet be we:and then putting ber necke under. and balaunling them in fuch forte that none of them bange bolone, carieth them els where. What wifedome ble the Chares in hiding their egges from theys males tobo are so techerouse that because thep thould not be occupied in conering them, would breake them ! Go there to the beaftes of the earth, and beating with those of foure fete, tell me word wifedome that is, that the Elephanntes, and the Camelles have? I woll not real fon with thee therof, for that it is a think most knowen . Goo then to the revol Deare and confider the males, who who they fele them felues fatte, bibe them, bes canfe they induc them bnapte to ronner and fo likewife when their bornes taule. till they put forth againe, thinking not to baue where with to defende them.

ti

ti

n

h

Ĺ

ti

10

li

ú

11

0

C

P

1

1

## The eyght Dialogue.

What shall I lave of the wisedome that the Hindes vie in the bringinge up of their pounge! who leke to faune only in thoseplaces, where they fee the steppes of menne: thinkinge that other beafter woulde five from thence, and that man is more meke then they: and after when they are formwhat bigge, in leading them bypon the rockes, and teaching them to leape: what wifebonne also bleth the Bere in teaching her little ones to clime trees? makinge theym afearde, for that they thould learne to befend them felnes from other beaftes. Df the wifebome of the Hole, and of ours, I will not speake: ber cause I am fore it is most knowen buto pou , bauinge continuall conterfation amongett you : and I will also speake much lette of the wilsome of those beftes that make their bodies on the earth. as the makes doo, whom you ble to put ur poire bandes, when you will fette 3 woll not ale foothe wiscome. fog talke of the wifebome of filbes, D.U. nol

at ber

encos

nging

ith the

et be

mber.

e that

them

se the

theps

chule

erina

then

ainmi

wbat

riteo!

t teal

thing

rebbe

bed :

n, bes

Miner

aule.

1-110f

"The enght Dialogue."

hor home they ain governe them felnes. and befende them from fuche as would take them in troubling the water with their phines or in calling certaine blacke mater like inke and fome by one menes. nandome by an other: it fuffileth me that pou have learned of them, the making of thinpes, and the act of falling, the which bung fo many commobilies to the bus maine kinde, making the mes after the falbion of forme of their fete, and the ferles in likenes of certaine louises that fome fifter have, tobe comminge to the toppe of the Water, and Speading them forth, are by the belye of the formue, car ried by them: So that finally, if theu thalt ivel confider the overations of at beatles. thou shalt be enforced to confesse that we have more fullebonse then you , and confeauently, that our being is farre better then yours: for that we have had all thefe benefites frelye of nature: enen as thou half also confessed, that the ground of the Ciclopes the whiche bringeth forth ber fruit by ber own proper nature, is better then our Itaca, the which would berng forth

fet

rel

C

of

m

th

lo

th

m

th

ar

th

be

m

fo

fo

ar

be

u

th

th

al

81

D

p

A

#### The epoint Dialoge

foothe nothinge at all if the mere not labor red; and tolled by you. Pli. Truely Cleantos, when thou beganneft to talke of inifedome, I beleved that whiles thou were man, thou habbelt fludied mozall thinges: but thou bybbelt viocede very lette further, that I perceived it to be no thinge for fince thou art not able to tell what inifehome properly is, and belides this, confoundinge it often times with arte. Do. Warlt thou benve unto methat interome is the knowing to governe ber operations well and to dispose them well about those thinges that are good for ber Vli. Bo, but this sufficeth not: for he is not called twole, who prouteth, and orderneth well one thinge onely: as be(for example) thould be, that coulde no uerne bim felfe well about the bealthe of the bodye. or in the erercifing bim felfe ur the warres but be that boeth this about all those thinges that appertagne to good and quiet lininge: and this can not you bo and therfore wisebome can not be ur pourand that this is true, barken to me and I will proue it. Will borne is a vertue D.iy.

lues,

dipon

worth

lache

enes,

tbat

ite of

which

e bur

r the

a firm

that

the the

them

, car

Malt

tites.

it ine

CONT

etter

thefe

thou

ofthe

ber !

etter

2pmg

forth

#### The enght Dialoge.

that complieth in the mactip berffanbinge . for that there apperterneth buto it, to knowe the bumerfull pointes of thinges that are to be watty levithe which are her traff beginninges, the whiche is the office of the unberfranbinge: because be afterwarde by bis discourse, applieth them to perticulers, the whiche thange von hautinge not this bnberstandinge, can not boo. Do. And home toolte thou focive me, that it is in the buberstandinge, and not in the sence: Berken : Wifebome maketh ind rement of thinges palte, and of thinges to come: the which the coulde not boo, of the knewe them not: and the fence (as thou knowest)knoweth nothinge but that that is mefente. Do. Wihat', knowe not the memorie and fantalie, thinges ab-Vli. Dea, but they make noo inducment therof: not thep applye them not after to perticulers. Do. can not we have thefe froste punciples of Interome by nature, as you (for example) have theym by fcience! Fli. Fo: that they are epther gotten by learning,

t

#### The evalt Dialoge

all bui at by experience: and you can have neve pectep ther the one not the other . L'carning, for that you are not able to percease the build uerfalles. And experience, for that von wattu bane not the mentozie, that mape keps bober | the particulers : wherebotto reason afters warve lokinge, getteth footh erperience. Withat . baue not we a memories thou fement to knowe very lyttle theres Vli. of. Po:for pours is imaging tine, and not memorie. Do. And what difference makest thou berein, of we by our imaginatine, remember thinges palte; as pon by pour memorie doo, of it Mi. be true that thou haft lavde? is true that the imaginative kepeth the representations of thinges, that the sens ces have knowen, as the memorie booth: but the memorie kepeth them somewhat moze diffinctly, and moze perticulerive: and befodes this, council tome thereonto, when it was that the receaued suche representations by the sence, the whiche thinge, the pmagmatine alone, as you have canne not boo. And there face the Alle, when be commeth to a D.mi. ovebe

UMI

merfall

ninges.

by bis

iculers.

tot this

o. And

tituin

fence:

indge-

iges to

pf the

us thou

at that

ve not

es ab

te moo them

adlin e

oles of

mple)

ung,

FO2

#### The enght Dialoge.

Is a viche, wherein he bath heretofoze fallen, will not (as it is favoe for a mouerbe) palle. And this commeth of nothing elle . but for that the imaginative repreten. teth buto bun onely the fallynee into that byche inviffinctive, and without anye tyme: wherefore, he not being hable to discusse, whether such a thinge bath bene in the time palled, or it be in the time pres fent, or it bath to be in the tune to come, the which are partes of the tyme, be flu eth, and will not valle it. It is very true, that those kindes, who have this power of the imaginative, a lyttle moore perfecte, whereby they knowe thinges form what more diffinctive, feeme to have the memorie: amonge the whiche lundes, thine bath the chiefe place. And therfore it feemeth that you remember thinges more and knowe thent better and perty culerly the marker, then any other beathboeth. And those other kindes, who have it moore imperfecte, feeme to remember lefte (as the fives, whoo ditten from a place, formet it by and by, and retourne thether agapne. See then beive man only

# The enght Dyaloge.

only, for that be knoweth the tyme, is be that bath memorie, whereby he onely, amongelt all other beaftes, mar be cale led wife. For he that bath not knowledge of the tyme, canne not indge, when it is good to boo a thinge, and when it is not, the whiche properlye appertagmeth to wifebome. Do. If we have not wife bome, what is that that leadeth be fo, to boo onely that, that belongeth to our nas An infinction, and a mos ture: Vli. wietie, that nature bath genen von for pour benefite, that directeth pour to pour ende. Wherefore, of thou (for example) shouldest aske those antes that were beed the lyzyng tybe past, for what cause they lave by in they? neftes, wherof to eate. who having no knowledge of the wine ter patte, can not bo it by wifebonne, as thou favelt: it is fure that they woulde aunswere , epther for that we see those which begate be do lo, or by an inclinate on that nature bath genen be, the whiche cauleth be lo to bo. Do. Is not this the felfe same in bs. that you call withome in pour Ni. Bo:rather thone thing is here D.b. farre

oze fal

merbe)

a elle.

melen .

to that

anve

ble to bene

e mes

come,

e flys

true,

ower

per!

e the

ides,

espit

ertu

ealf

ther

m a

nan

nly

#### The epoht Dialogue.

farre different from thother. For wife bome is no naturall thing, but is an bas byte fyrit cholen by will, and gotten after by overation. And because thou maiest the better beneritand thes thou muste perceane, that in our knowing part(I fpeake of the buberlianding and not of the fence) there are two powers: with thone of the whiche we beholve those thinges that are bnuariable necessarie, and everlas Aing.02 that have they beginninges in fuch facte, that they never after by anye other falbion: and with thother, we know the thinges chaunlinge, and chaunges ble and that may be aswell after one fag thion as after an other. The fysit is called speculatine buberstandinge, op else unmbefull:and thother reason, or else bif course, and pactifinge buberlandinge. But because the thinges necessarpe and binariable are of three fortes (for eyther they are beginninges of conclusions, foldwinge the favoe beginninges: 03 else they are a gathcronge together of thone and thother) in the speculatine part there are lykelvife three habites, that is to lay

a

p

f

### The eight Dyaloge.

fape: bnderstandinge, science, and wife bome: with the biderstandinge, the bo ginninges are percepued. with fcience. the conclutions and with wifebome thone and thother. And because the thinges bap pening, are also of two sortes: for eviber they are active and operative, or else they are factine ( } fpeke of those that are in one power, and not of those that nature doeth) those are called active or operative that belong to our customes, and moval operations, and that make be sour affectio perfect, directing it towards the good: and fac tine, those apperteine to thinges without us, and make them perfect. About the first confilteth ivilbom, the which is none other thing then an habite to work with reason, about those things that are either good buy to bs.oz cuill:about the fecond, art is erer ctied, the which is nothing but a fourme to do with reason, the artificiall thinges, Se the how in vou beaftes ther can never ev ther wifebons, or art be found, for that you baue no reason or practical buderstanding the which is there lubicct . Por it is also to be marueled at that nature, who doeth no thing

nifes

bas

fter

the

Deta

ake

nce)

the

bat

rias

m

we

olu

eas

fas

ale

lle

Dis

re.

to

er

5,

03

of

rt e

#### The epght Dialogue.

thing in bayne, bath geuen you nevther thone not thother, lince you having not to governe any others then your felnes. (except pour pong, for the finale time that they could not line without you) the which chaunfeth not to be to whom the couers naunce of a boufbold and of publike mats ters belongeth: in the whiche, wifebone verchannle is farre more necessarie, then in those of our owne causes (and von bas mina no nebe of any thing, belides of that, that nature of ber felfe bungeth forth one to vou have no nebe to lupply with arte. Do. Whiles thine eloquence is luche, and bath fo great force, that be who shoulde beare thee and knowe not formelwhat bevond toould belene that all that thou half favo. were true: not with fanting as thou becanft to freake, thou bibbeft favle/as it is lave for a pronerbe)at the nates. Vli. And I pray the tel me, what error bane I mabe: Do. Then bibbeff not number among the knowing babites of your buber standing, the opinion, when thou diddest recken them, and vet thou knowest that by the meanes therof you knows many things

thi

for

mo

of O

ar

ot

it

11

fe

D

nti

g

# The enght Dialogue.

thinges. Vi. Pap, thou the felf haft favled: for thou percepuedly not, that I woulde not speake therof, when I saide, speking of thinges chauncong, that I would refon onelve of those thinges that Devend of bs about the which, wilbome is exercised: and I would let those paste, that depend on nature, about the knowledge of the which the ovinion is ercercifed: whereby it is no maruell if it be formetimes beceve ned, the thinges that nature bringethe forth, being fo mamp and fo diverte. Do. And what was the occasion that moned thee to boo this ? Ti. Because that is not worthy to be number amongelt these vertues, or intellectual babits, for as much as that bringeth no perfecti on at al to the bnberstanding, as these do. For man is never called bute for baning opinion of a thing, as he is for knowing it. And befores this, the opinion mape be beceueb, and none of the reft of them can. Do. What none: Can not the other bas bites also be deceined ? Vli . Pot these first three that are in the speculative bus derstanding, for that their objectes are bnua

ther

ies.

that

bich

ers ats

me

ba:

at.

on= te.

and

De

bes

ME

u

as Li.

3

a. er

Œ

P

#### The eyght Dialoge.

bnuariable, wherby that that almaies be ether true or falle that the foule that jung with which thou wilt of these three . And the like that ealfo in those tipo, that are in the macticall binderstandinge . But here is this difference, that with the firste it mogeth and faith alwaies the truth. aswell of his owne parte as of that of the thinges about the which he is ererailed, for that they are bnuariable, and canno mot channae. And with the fecond it faith alwaies the truth only, on his own part. Do. And will thou benve me then, that art and imbome are not fometimes be cemed: Vii. Bo, but this (as 3 baue tolbe thee procedeth not of their part, for that they are most true babites; but of the barietie and condition of thinges, aboute the which they are erercised. Do. And to thus also aunswere mught be made: but I will retourne to our purpole, and afke thee, if we have not wifebome, then from whence cometh the right course of our operations, and that we faile much leffe in those, then pour do in poures ! and of we have not art, from whence coineth the

thi

int i

218

fre

ne bù

CO

fr

th

of

131

m

bı

0

r

ſ

t

b

b

# The enght Dialogue.

this merveilouse cunning, that is seens be those things that we make for our vie, as are for erample, the neftes that we make for our younge: Vli . It commeth from an inflinction and a certaine bable nes, the which enery one of you bath in his kinde, genen you by nature for the confernation of the fame kinte, but not from wifedeme.oz anvearte at all . And that this is true, fee howe all the beaftes of one like kinde, baue like falbions, and make their neftes and their other things after one forte: inbere as if invienome were the cause therof, or art, who worke by election, there shoulde some varietie be fene in them, respectonce either times o; places, o; many other occasions, as it is at all times fene in oures. Do. Thefe reasonnes Willes that thou shewest me feme onto me only differences of names the whiche have bene putte to thonges by you, as it hath pleased you, where by that selfe same that you call topses dome, and arte in you, is called by you in be influction, and baloure of nature

les be

iuda

and

tare

But

firste

utb.

ftbe

ifed.

mme

aith

art.

that

6 Des

aue

foz

the

ute

and

:sou

and

resc

of

ach

eth

the

The epght Pialoge.

nature. The indiche if it be more typhilipe guided thereby in is, then it is in you, it is a figure that it is better, and that ine be more perfecte then you. So that gening noise an ende to our commoning, entoy thou the hind that thou thinkest better: for 3 thinking this better inherin 3 am, inil so remaine.

# The ninth Dialogue. The ninth Dialogue.

Willes, the Calfe.



that the proverbe is true, which faith, that there which faith, that there is nothing int his worlde that hath bene by nature more infly benived the the brame:

sins it senieth even to every one of these beates, with whom I have spoken, to have so much there in that state whering they ar, that there is not one of them that some gene place to the reason of man, who perviscozieth and worketh with reasons esteming their chaunce farre better, them over, the which yet I can never thinke that they had heart to saye whiles they were menibut this also maperise of the great love, that eache thinge beareth to his being, of the whiche it is so islouse, that there is none that altogether would chaunge it, with anye kinde of other, so fears

tyghti t is m id that

o that

t

#### The ninth Dialogue.

feare at that change to be put in baminger of loffe therby and thefe perchaunce hand pen more also to man, then to any other thing. I speake of the substaunciall be inge and not of the accidetal: for 3 knots bery well, that an olde manne month chaunge bis age, with the age of a poung man and one licke, his disposition inthe that of a bole, and every pooce man bis State with that of a riche. But to chaunce them felues fubitancially, and to become an other, there are feine that will bo it: for that there is none or most feine that beleue that an other is better then theirs. Sothat it is no maruaile, if none of thefe beaftes would be persuaded by me to be come manne againe . But alas fee what a faire Calfe this is that commeth fo fafe ive feding towardes me: A, what fierce nes theweth this beatt in his foreheade and notwithstanding bowe gentle vet be is and how be fuffereth man to bandle him: furcly we are not little bounde to nature, that the hath made this beaft, for it is plainely fene, that the bath made boun foz

for t

part

fire

ban

cha

fiai

fins

SHI

Tit

be

ful

Del

PH

CA

th

M

V

te

gi

The minth Dialogue.

for that he should take from man a great parte of his paines, be beinge of fuche Archath, and therewith so easye to be bandled . I will fee, if he, who was shaunged into him, was by chauce a Bros tian, the which would happely be: for fins be bath drawen fo nigh me, that be swichte beare me reason , he hath fanbe Adl to barken buto me, even as thoughe be bnberfode mc. Calfe, tell me, (as be who may bo it, geve thee that thou mole belireft) who were thou, and of what blace's before thou haddelt this thave? Cal. Quen of the felfe fame countrie that thou also art, of that that thou spear helt be thine owne proper language. Vii. Then thou thouldest bestre alfon to returne to fee Gretia the countree as gaine as a boo, Cal. Bo true we. For where one is well there is hos countrie: but this commeth of the betinge that I nowe have, that thoughe I might well, I woulde in no wife become manne agavne, and baupnge to remaine thus as I am, this is to fruitfull .p. ef and

nger

hap-

ther

l bes

tole

ouls.

Ditt

the

bis

nge

me

it:

bet

M.

efe ;

ger.

at.

0

24

Mi

2

.

1

h

#### The ninth Dialogue.

and fo pleafaunt a place, that I wil in no mile chaunge it . Vi . Doeth no res mehaunce at all moue the, either of him red. or fren bes, that thou lefte there we the countrye, to before to le them againe. as at the least the country it felfe the lone inherof is fo great, that there have boung manye inbo for cause thereof, inne not paraoned anve thinge, even boto there sione life. Ca. And thus is one of the bourdens that man bath , to have almost alipaies me thoughtes, and mo cares in bis mind, because of his kinteen, of his frendes, 02 of bis country, then be bath of him felfe: the tobiche caufeth that ? ful remaine in this fate, where I thinke mot.az most litle, but foz mp felfe, toberes by a live without any thought at al, togethers with thothers of my kind, never being troubled by them: for amonge be. for that every one thunketh onely for home felie and for that he bath of nature all. that be nebeth, there are no batrebes . no enimities no enuves no roberies , no bis mente beathes, neither of fivorbe, nor of voisonne, noza thousande euilles, of the mbiche

UMI

mtb

rout

VH.

bp 1

11100

aim

a fa

Ca.

fer

TOO

ter

fba

BU

25

ge

nt

m

bi

th

او

3

The northe Pialogue.

which bumaine lyfe , to much babouns beth, that it bath bene called by fome of pour wife men, the great fee of miferies. This thentee in no wife be favor by you beaftes, for that there are many moo beteftable faultes amonge pouther among men. And be who is footted with a fault Bould not blame others thereof. I knowe that there are byces also Ca. among be: for the lawes of nature fuf fer not, that there be any thing in all this worke, that be not in some sorte worthe repredention: notwithstantinge thou thait not tynde, (of theu confider well all pur kindes) mo then one bice in eche one; as there is for an erample in Beares, and ger, in Wigers cruelty, in wolves raus nong, in Hogges glotonve, and to loke wife with others: where as name what byces thou wpite, and thou walte fynde them all in man. Vli. of thou speake of the kinde, and not of one man alone. I will agree, that thou lavelt in some part true: for it is not pollible, that in one one ip man all byces could be found, for thep 10.W. would

in no o cer

hap

re m

ine,

lone

anne

mot

beer

the

to (E

sin

ath

3

TEA

to-

er

5,

H.

.

ia

.

#### The month Dialognes

bonto beffrove his berng : but it anishes well be possible that in one onely man, all bertnes mighte be founde , of be bad to longe lyfe, that he mught gette them, hauing an ante mitte to boo all thinges. And boing for Vis. Besaule but ces being contrary the one to the other, as for example, feare is buto bolbnes, and conetoulnes to probigalitie, they canne not stande togethers : where as unto bertues, not bernge contrary, but the one rather belper of the other, it foldweth not And are there not bertues al-Ca. fo among be: Vli. Bot fo perfecte as in man : and when it were even as thou lavelt, one, or fewe mo onely for a kinde, wher (as I have tolde thec) man only may have them all. Ca. Dea, lo lave pou, but we are of a contrary opinion: Hather I fave to thee, that there are many moo bertues amonge bs, then amonge Vli. pott. And whoo shall be subge Ca. Thou the felfe: for of thou berken buto me, 3 will propert to playnely, that thou thalte were ferr tence

tha

fga

get

no

Dil

th

21

nti

f

8

.

#### The monthe Dialogue.

tepes agaynit the felfe . Tell men lette: wa not your wyle men, that Justice Instict toan affemble of all bertues , and that the contenueth theym all in her, grupng to enery thonge the rightnelle, and rule, with the which they thoulde vie therm felwere for what other is there but the, that commanneth the fortiall that be feare not and that be five not those bauns gers, that bornge bim renowne: and to the temperate, that be gene not him felfe ouermuch buto pleasures, or that be boo not any thinge inconveniente, to auorbe bibleafures:and buto the meke, that be Dog none inturie buto others ? Wibo is there belives this, but Juffice, that openneth all the bornges of man, measuring. and reducince into a conveniente meanes all they downges: as well those that they doe willingive and freely, as to Ell, to lende, to gage, and luke thinges: as also those that they boo, as enforced, enther by disapne, or by thepr suil cus frome , oz fecretely , as thefte , kyllinge by trealon, poplones, trealones, and falle witnes 10.my.

ban'

benz.

ges.

by:

bet,

and

inne

ber

one

mot

sal

28 9

hou

De.

nap

ou,

Ras

unp

spi

Das

fos

eit

411

ICO

#### The nynth Dialogue.

witnes bearing are, or openly, or with out any respecte at all, as are billanves, Arppes, merming of the members, and manslaughters and other such loke butrages. Vli. Truelv, this that thou know is true:and for this cause there are forme. that call inflice the hole bertue: abbinae belodes this, that the is more perfect then any other. for as muche, as the others make hun good, that possesseth them ones lpe, as touching them felues: and the conerneth man, not onely as touchunge her felfe, but as touchinge others: and loays eth not onely the perticuler benefite, but the brincriall. Ca. Then that that 4 lay being true, of I thall prove buto the, that amonge you there is no Jufice, or mooft lytle, and not inface truely: it that! be proued by confequence, that amonge pen there is no bertue at all, or mooft ly tle and not bertue truelp. Alfo pf 3 hall vione buto thee afterwarde, that there is more infice among bs, then among you, it thatbe lokewife prouce by confequence; that we have many mos bertues then 2011, and that our being is farre better then

23

£

ST ti

1

t

#### The nynth Wialogue.

then vours. Vli. The conclution is monte true: but the bifficultie is in prouvng it. Co. Shall it not alwayes be proned, when the propositions are pro-Evli. Unowell ned that bringe it m? thou so muche logiker Ca. WAbp, what mirade is that, 3 beyng a Gretian : for thou knowest that all we laboure therin, whiles we be children. Hi. Go to, folow then. Ca. The greater of the two provolitions, the whiche is, where there is no inflice, there is no bertue at all, I have already proued to thee, fonce thou hafte graunted me, that the contevned all bers tnes in her: for the whiche cause the hath bene called as thou sappest, the hole bers tue. Vli. Go to, 3 am contente: notre to the leffer. Ca. And this allo is mooth embent, of that lo famous a propolition of pour tople men be true , favinge : that enery thinge is knowen by his operation ons. And I will have bereof none other witnesse then thone: for 3 thinks my selfe moofte fure, that of thou thalte diligently confider the operations of men, thou thatt fave as 3 fave. Vi. De, verabuenture 10.b.

ves.

But.

we

me.

nge

ben.

ets

110

00

ber

aps

t F

be,

alf

ge

lin Illa

ÍS

u,

P;

715

CC

n

#### The mynth Dialogue.

of they bin all after one forte. .- Ca. .. 36 luffleth that thou thalt fee the more part to beinftly, by whom the occasion should alwaies be taken to make subgement of thinges. But tell me I way thoe: of there mere infice amonge you naturally, as there is amonaeft us: 01 pf poulined ace corbing to that laine that is imitten by nas ture in the bart of eche of you, what nebe Monid von bane of fo many latves as you have made: although as it is bled to be fand for a pronerbe: they are loke forbers webbes, for the great beaftes break them, and the fives remaine there. . Vli. It is true that of eche one would boo buto others, as be inould be done buto as the lawe of nature willeth, there thould then nebe none other laines: notivithfandinge the greater part of them are made by the beclaration of the natural law and if they hould fwarue from that, they thould not be accompted iuft . for as thon thouldeft knowe, lyke as in speculative thinges, there are somme as principles that are knowen to eucrye man by they owne nature, and by the lyghte of the buders Han

#### Themuth Dialogue!

fantium: wherfore they nebe nothered ued as it flouid be for an example, that one onely things can be and san not be in one time . And fome other timacs as conclusions that wacene from these fuels povotes and are grounded in them: Sog are there also in active thinges certaine lightes, and naturall vinciples; knowe en by a commune notyce, and by the me per nature to everyman as for erample it should be not to be that unto others that thou wouldest not shoulde be home but to thee. And then by these vainciples, come thefe lawes written, and are grounded on them. Cs. It femeth to me that they are made, for that you mave be able to interprete this naturall reason after vour owne fashion, and to plucke it this inave and that wave, as it pleaseth vou, theining that perv often to be juste with inorbes, that is most briust in bedes: and if thou take good hebe to of that I have larbe buto the . b erverièce thou shalt se . that he inho can belt imelt a laive buto his belier. is taken for the belt boctor. Vli. Sweake to me of the laines as touching them felues. and

art

طاو

t of

ere

45

200

nas

ebe

be

ers m.

3

nto

the

EH

the

rep

tot

cft

es.

ire

ne

er

uv

#### The nonth Dialogue.

and not of there berng ill bled: for 3 in the part would come unto thee, fo that res turne to our fool commoning, and their me that there is no infice founde among be as thou haft tolde me. Ca. I feke to do nothing else:and because thou maiest plannely knowe it, thou shalte unders frande, that inflice friste is devided into two partes: thone of the whiche is called bistributine, and thother commutatine. The frust consusteth in the distribution of honours, and of punishmentes, honos rung and rewarding the good, of punis foing, and chaffening the eutl: and the other in commutation of thinges neces fary to the ble of man, obserning the equalitie, and counterchaunging, that the cimitie and quiet livinge togethers of the one with thother requireth. Then if none of these partes be found among you, neither that the bole also be found among pon : the same consistinge in none other thinge, then in his partes. Vli. And who aftereth me, that none of these partes of iuffice, are founde amonge bee Ca. Wilho: Crycrience: and thou thy

ma

b

p

11

h

r

ď

#### The ninth Dealogue.

the felfe alfo, if thou wite not fuffer the felfe to besabused by theme owne affects ons. Tell me I pray thee, beginning at the firste, what equalitie, as what true Incerenes, and without any favour. fine belt thou among you, in the diffribus tion of bonours, and of rewarbes, that bertuous & good men deferue:and of the punishmentes that bices and cuil men deferue:feing among fo many both bers tuoufe, and good men, not onely no effic mation to be had of them, but also to be bery ofte opppelled, perfecuted by others. banilbeb, and a thoulande other outrages bonne buto therm. vli. Go not fo farre: for this fould be to wicked a thing to be enull buto a bertuous man. butbout bauing any occasion.

Ca. And though they have no occasion, pet they do it to put them oute of the eies of men, for that they should be no comparison to them, and that others beholving the life and manours, of the one and of the other, should know their vices the more plainelye. Parke well even ours rites of Gretis, as well those that are rue

led

es

Bio

Î

20

0

A

e.

n

is 1e

G

e se

ıſ

if

1,

Œ

T

\*

u

D

#### The nitth Dialogue.

led by Wrinces as those, that are goner's nco by the chiefe men. 02 by the publike governance, and thou shalte se what place the rull baue there : and home little the good are estemed, by the onely faut of the proper inordinat love of those to ipho the diffribution both of remains and pus nilbmentes belongeth: who perv often fuffer them felues to be fo much corrups ted by profit, or by pleafure, or by forme of ther bareafonable valloit, that it is fome times fene for one like bertugus overatis on one to be rewarbed and no effinati on at all to be made of an other. And like toile also for one like offence, to punifibe one areubully, & one other not only not to be puntified but to be remarbed and fet in some bearee. Vii. And when that that thou faift were true, that there is no bis Arributtue inflice among bs: betve is it then found amonge you ! for thou balle told me that you are farce more wit then ine. Ca. Quen afmuch as is revented for our fate and nature. And of thou obferue our operations, thou thatte know it of the felf, and perticulerly who thousest

2

d

#### The ninth Dialogue?

bs.fighteth with an other: where them thalt fee all be rejoife and make mirth to bun that is the winner . And that then that are unviolitable are by he continue allve befolfen. Vli . Thefe pon thoulde knowe of your owne felues whether it be true or not .: Box I will bispute no more with thee thereof . But what wilte thou far to me of the comutatine parte. how much is that among your Ca. Guen as much as is amongelt vou , who have not one most little part therof: but this bifference ther is that among beit is not founde, for the baue no nete thereof , has wing every thing in common:and among you, for haung feverate thine from mine pou cannot live frely without it, for that conetouines, that your wicked burnmar of riches, bath winen it away, whereby nou never be any other thing the thone to thinks, to sollette of is the others, furthe onte haurige any respecte at at onto the good and the right in your bargains and commutations of thinges that the one of vou maluth with thother: but rather be se accomptes amongelt pon the moofe ballante, who in his trangiling can make the

ke

at

tle

nf

bó

MIS

eri

ID s

0

ne.

1213

26

ie,

be

ret

fet

nat

Dis

tt

Tè

ent

20

be

it

of.

15,

#### The ninth Dialogue.

the greatest gaines, either laweful or bus laweful, to that they be to make him the foner riche, beceining others and blime bing their cies in Inch forte, that they can not perceine the trueth, though hereof for my parte I bolde you much ercused. Vii. And what is the cause of thine ersule, fins the thing is so brinst as thou For that be whoe is faveft : Ca. riche, is to much estemed amonaest vou: although be have no parte at all of those thinges that are required in man, that 3 subge all thinges to be wel bone, when it is done to be riche. Alas bowe many feett thou amonge pour, who if they wer pooze thould be accounted foles: and ther ibula not onely no estimation be bab of them. but they should be dispiled and estemed like inite beaftes: inho for being riche. are made much of and effemed, and all their boinges praised, and all that they fave: tobo pet doo and fap bery oftenne times like fooles . They dispile bertues, neuer bauing any other thing in their monthes, but that he toboo bath not monye is a foole, and to be made of little effimation

4

D

9

31

t

á

8

3

f

t

#### The ninth Dialogue.

mation and let bim that inill folding beli tue gotfor the matter flangeth in being riche, and such other like mades, with auteamy confideration or judgemente at mil and they are alwaies to much occur pled in folowing gaines, that when they Departe from this woulde, they knows not whether they were here or not:never bauing knowen erther them felues, og the bentie, or the nature of anye thing of this butterfall morles. The whiche miable well have bene for them in that Chaos.oc that confusió, whether it be, be fore it was thus ordeined by nature. For they are by all meanes foo much blinded in the defire of riches, that they have their eves alivates bente thereunto, and lefte them never bove to consider the beautie and order of as much as continualive cos passeth them about, the which shoulds be the meanes and path way, to bring them to the confideration of other greter thinges, and moze dinine. And on the other five ther is foilitle estimation had of one whe he is pooze, that his wordes and counfel ar compared to power of them thet

UMI

I into

n the

blass

can

ereof

uleb.

e er

thou

DE IS

pout:

bole

at 3

en if

**cell** 

0028

blue

emi, ned

the.

all

bep

me

eir

to.

an

. The north Dialogue.

that carpe burnens for hier, or to the bens tie of harlottes, that gene them felues for energe byle thinge. Vli. Go no farther in numbing the wonges, that arem bumain operations: for a also know wel that ther are many men, who mainen by their proper love, do very often , not only that that they should not neebut that that after whe they are not appallioned, wold they had mener done. But this maketh not that there is no inflice amongett be: for there are many afwel in the offerbus tine, as also in the comutatine, who wold neuer do anye thinge against the lawe thereof. The eramples of whom , for not to be tedious buto thee, and for that bookes are full thereof, I will not theme the. And those your operations that thou half rehened buto me, thew also that ther sleffe whice among you, though they eme ordeined, or bispoled after the order of iuftice, Cal, And why fo fins eue ere thing is knowen by his operations: Pli. Because in you they are customes and properties, that you have had by nature who knowing that you have not the know

UMI

kn

D.I

25

**Spie** 

cot

the

fat.

21

CET

bm

fre

su

alt

THE

me

to

fib

£u

190

ful

cr

ell

#### The minth Dialogue.

knowledge mor can appe you of pour feld wes.in the path that is belt for you, hath fo directed pour for pour belt commodities Montalime.cant thou ficto me propers he what thing wiftice is: Cat. It is a confirm and vervetual livel, the which menett venervonethat that is his, and that that beloarth to him, as I have hard fan of wour wife men of Gretia : and foo a thinke it is what faieft thou , am 3 de comen: File Ro, of for the woll, thou busine and there's an habite canfed by frequentebactes: fai be is not tuft, tobo enceiozeforfe worketh justive, but he that almaves or at the leaft most community. thorketh according to the fame. Cal.

Math understandent soo, for I knowe wel that those powers that never come to effect, are vaine thinges and impossible. The Then of it so be, what in successful that there be in you, since you have not the which the which is the subsecte, on the which takes as thou know este, is a reasonable power. And none D.y. but

1.000

bens

s for

ther

THE ST

inel

t bu

nip

bat

ala

eth

bg:

1115

ala

De

02

at

96

111

25

p

r

با

#### . Whe ninth Wislogne.

but reasonable creatures can hane ft. Ce. And who san it not be in the fenfiting aspetite the which we also have alread as your Via Mocanfe inflice orbeineth and ruleth that par e called appetite , the Sobich foloweth the knowledge: and this is the will , the which folometh the bus berffanding, who knoweth not onelys the thinges(as it might be fain) that the fense also both but also knoweth the mai vartion that is between them: inbereby it map indge that that belongeth both to the one and to the other, the tubich thing the fenle canne not boo. Ca. of we bane not instice, what is that then that himes leth our appetite, and that maketh it in tomardes others: for as A baue tolde thee before we live farre more infily the and with the other then you boo . Vi . Haus I not told it theerit is a law out therin by nature for your benefit : by the meanes of the which laine, pour worke necessarie ive according to the fame: and for thois sperations that come by nature, there is neither maile not difinate at all befere ned. As a stone for fallinge downe is nether

neva fier fo mout (fot 3 bane thee. hoob that vour COOD atts is he. Smith ties, form then ratio Anno inht nevi gen muti One rati Dist

uen

The nighth Dialoge

newher pjayled no difuzabled .. that the fier for goving bywatte. And which thou wouldest lay to me that von worke ferely. (for a thinke it femeti but o vou that voit? bame a free appetite) 3 Wable aunfinere! thee, that inhen this also were loo . bon howive not perfective and vikinetive that! that pou boo: whereby it foloweth, that pour everations can not be truck callen cood, for to will that an acte be bertui ous and perfecte, it chiefely behoueth that! ins, who worketh; worke knowingly and mittingly ... Thefe are noutlist · Ca. ties and exaftes, that you of your feints! forme to be accompted fuperiours of or therebut be that that well note vour opes rations. hall lay that of Tollice be found among pou, it is onely in woodes. The which thinge is not to with be, for wenevther knothe not can be any meanes." gene notice contrary to that that we have huthin bs, as pou bo. .: Ili. Let bs woo oner formewhat more distinctive the unes rations that procede from Nathice 1 actions pinge that diffinition that thou halfe ge uen me of ber, the tobich fit bein dede in D.w. true

he he by

na

80

les

1E

88

to

38

ES de

die

G

í

to

is

# Ebenonto Deddal.

True. And thou shalte fee bothe farre food: Deceanede the Elfer to lave that you are more inflathen ine ; for inflice gruinge to energ body, that that his, nelecth for the to the moddes, that benouve, that is but buto them. And this, whether it he parte of ber . 03 an elected berine, appointed and faffened butg her, is called by be reli mon. Tell me gittle: howe can it evther in parte or in belo be formberamong viere tobo not onelp know not the godies but allo have no thoughte or beliefe at all that: they be, not bauing the biscourse of rese fon by the meanes whereof, ryther to. inave of motion, or by wave of accidence. who of them felues have no berng at alt. but are alwayes in others, you anpette come in knowledge of the mouers, or of any feperate fubitaunce. Ca. 3 knowe not this 3: but pet there are amonast be of those, who do renerence to the sonne, ener w morninge when they arvie, acknowne lebarnac hom for the aveatest momister of nature : and amonge the berteson these that as some as the mosnyage appeareth. to them boon our Drison, thanking him, and

andi

put f

of w

amo

him

and

Vli.

that

un

that

mb

the

ipv

rou fur

out

105

mi

ble

m

the

VO

th

tr

tb

# The nynth Dialoge

and fourning them felues towardes him,2 put feeth them notes : but what freake 3 of us that are animate, fundinge allog: amonge berbes of those who bonouring? bim, tourne they? leaves continualive, and there flowers towarses bis lighte. Vli. This commeth by no knowletge. that any of them bath of him, as of a be une thingesturt by the helpe and comforte. that they take by the lyabte - and bete: whereby, to take preater contentation thereof, they tourne towardes bim, these ivonge certapue spgnes of invithe, thos roughe the vicafure they feele. Goo then: further the that that thoulde be genen to oure countries, and to those that engende us, the which detuty we call vitie. Pote withstandinge, of that that shoulde be: bled towardes the countrey, wherebuto. we are noo leffe bounde then to our far thers. Awdi not realon, because even las you have not made anve billinction of. there and mine to allo have vou no couns: trep, norang place of pour ownerbut of: those that tame begotten pour tobat feres wece or what gentlenesse canne you ble towards D.iit.

Dog:

ate

e to

2the

buz:

arte

itch.

celu

ber

tere

but

hat:

1880'

to.

CE,

di

hte

of

De

of

E

De

が施地し

#### The month Dialoge.

towardes them . who knows them not, fauma fo longe as you have note to remapne buter they cultobie. Ca. Are there not also amonge bs of those that ble that putte: Confiner the floreke a lyttle Two when he feeth his father and mother. not beeng able to five any moze.for ane to remaine in the neft, nourificth and fus Reineth them even with his owne bloub: and ferna therm to lacke fethers, pluce keth hun felfe and covereth theym . for that they flouid not be burte evt ber with colde,02 with the aver. Vhi. And what matter is this, funding it in one kunde onely: for thou shalte fynde none other but the Storcke that booth this : of the Inhiche it mave be also savbe, that he boeth It more for bis owne commonitie, then to refrace his father and mother: for he bepugbery cold by nature, after that he bath motten bis fobe, remarneth allo together: in the nefte mith theven, to warme bim felfe. Bothen further to those bueties that thoulde be genen to the fuverioures. me buto thefe lobo by forme bertine beferue

to be ho b pa to וובש bevt thal ast 1110 to 1 the fha be teb na DB Sei De be of V ly

t

8 t

# The month Dvaloge!

to be more bountred the the others, called by he obenience or reverence what freund or token of thevir is there founde among Co This nebeth not to be.ins berng all equall : thoughe vet amongs those hyndes, who have nede of a gupbe. as the cranes, or the bees, thou fhalte feels moofte greate obedience, and reverence Vli. Call it ras to theve fuverioures. ther a naturall inclination , and them thalt fav true. Bo then to that that foould be veloed to fuch as do thee a benefite. cala ted by be thankefulnes. or kyndnes. what narte thereof fhalte thou forme amones C4. Is there not many of he pou : fene, not onely to be kynde one towars besan other, but to ferue man, for that he geneth theum whereof to cate, or fome other necellary thinge for theine Pea, as longe as vour felnes Vli. lofte: but it is afterwarde feene, as the tove commeth in your heade, you firinge at he with your beeles, and doo he a thousande other outrages, forgettings

of.

250

ire

ble

tle

er.

an

us

D:

10

02

th

at

20

PE

12

b

0

3

b

E:

1

1

.

1

## The month Dialogue.

of be. I will not speake of frendform for that it can not be amonge your I fpee be of that frendelbippe that bath bertue for a foundation: by the which the free electis. on of the munde is after moued and not of the naturall frendshoppe: for in this there conditeth no parte of wifice at all. And to lokewise the care and discretion that should be had of those that are our inferiours. All the whiche thinges has upng the discourse of reason for a foun-Bation . can hot be founde amorne pou. So that weake no more foo folibles that vour state, because there are manye moo. bertues amonge pou, then amongelt bs. Chould be better then oures : for than arte decepued by the luttle knowledge.

4 will dispute it no mane with thee. Fo although then Houldest baue the better barde of me with woodes. 3. not being able to make thee aunfivered for being muche leffe crerased in this arte then thou; this opinion woulde als wayes refte in my mende, as mooff frue, because the same groweth in me becrues 30

2.5 tience. Tience the in tve The nynth Dyaloge.

rience, and by the lensitive knowledge, the which (as I thinke) passeth in certeny tye all others. And therefore thanking there of thy good will to wardes mee, I will take my leve at thee, for I will lyne thus.

Milles, the Clephant.



Lousthing, that among to many Gretians as I have spoke with, transfourmed by Circes into diverse beaftes, there bath bene none that

would become man agapne. And of the pronerbe, the which is common through our Gretia, laying: that it is impossible, that that, the which many lave, can be altogether falle, were true in all thinges, I mught make by this indgement, that the being of beastes, who are boyde of reason, wer farre better then ours. But it should onely be true, in thinges that appertance to the active life of man: for when one speaketh of the knowledge of our binderstanding, about the trueth and the nature of thinges: I have beard moost commonly one other proverbe vsed, cleane contrary

to this: the which faith, that one Boulde knowe as the fewelf . And befides this ? have alwaies berbe our fulle men ceue many Enthetes to the comon people of sering of builtablenes of wanering and of many other qualities, all the whiche beteben little knowledge and imperfects subgement, where by we can not main teme them both to be true and vet the na ture of properbests, by longe experts ence to be true er cept me bnacefiana the one for things practicall, and thether for fpeculatine . Then fince the knowledge of the mablenes of the burnaine nature. and home muche the same knowledge passeth in perfection, the knowledge of other beattes, who lacke of the buter. Manding and of the ablenes to discourse with reason, appertaineth to the contemplatine parte, whole office is the feking the truth, it is no marualle though the most parte erre: it shall then be best since Ctrces bath alreadue restored mu compamions and thippes, and they tarve onely for me, that I returne bome, and lole no proce time, where 3 can not fee that 3 myght

g

E

W

re

at

22

d

2,

北

96

1,

0

12

2

13

f

2

p

might do any profit at all. For I will not therefore that their little knowledge hurt me as it both them : because remaining bere amonge them beattes, though & he a man. I thould live after the imaginates on and the memozve as they doo : where as amonge men I thould live according to art, and reason: by whose menes. Drame ina nere continually to my perfection, perather getting from bay to bave part therof, I hall come to live with a more quiet and better contented mind . Let be then ao towardes the flippes, and let bs not take more care for others, the for our felues, for this should be a most great foliv. But what beaft to I fee of fuch brine furable gretnes walking on the fe ftrod: it is an Clephant, if I through the farre distaunce, that is between be, be not bee ceined. D howe great is the varietie of nature, in the production of beatles: and howe glad I would be, that he who was turned into hun , had bene a Gretian. bis countenaunce bath caused me to Loue him so much by beholopinge hym: 3 Hgar

1

U

t

f

¥

21

h

t

t

t

Í

I

l

t

beafter

The tenth Dialogue.

smill therefore afke hunit: for if I could finde but even one onely tobo toquid by mp meanes become man againe, 3 fbulb not thinke to have frente thefe my trauailes in baine. Tell me Clephaunt . of thou were a man Las I thinke thou werd before thou handelt this thave, what thou mere. Ek. I mas a Gretran s of the mot famous citie of Athenes, inhere & Cubied philolophye a very longe time, and my name was Aglafemos. But tell me now inho thou afkelt me this ! for thou knoeft that I bilosophers seke none other thing then to knot of the occasion of all things. to quiet and fatisfive that befire of knows ing, that every one bath by nature. Vli. Db thanked be the goddes infinite ly, that at the last 3 bave founde one loner of the truthe : and one that mave truelpe call hun selfe manne: knowe thou Aglafemos, that Circes hath grain ted me, thorough her gentlenes, that 3 may reftore the humaine shape to al those Gretians, that I find in this ber Illand, who have bene by her transformed into

nof

net

ma

he

atu

era

md

im

on.

art

018

hg

'hg

our

fol

ne

500

rre

Der

of

und

BBC

IIT.

to

E

Hg

beaftes and may lede them with me into their country agame, but on this condi tion that they be contented therewith. Wilherefore for the lone of my country. have enfocced my felfe to get out of fuch muserable bonbace, all those that I have founde bere . And notivithstandance al thoughe I have fooken with manne . I can pet find none that will become man againe, not that knoweth the nobilitie of the bumaine beinge, and the tolenes, and imperfection of the being of beatles. Ele. And what causeth thee to thinks that I Chould be better able to verceius then they and who faieff then that I de ferue moze then they to be called mane The profession that thou toldest me thou bibbeft, whiles thou were a ma. the which greatly cloueth and desireth the truth, or rather neuer both any other thinge then alwaies seke it. For they with whom I have fpoken , fome being plowmen, some fishers, some phistions, fome lawvers, and some gentlemen, the ende of whom semeth to be chiefely proit and belight, will remaine thus beffes,

m

int

mo

DEI

the

Dec

a l

the

no

to

mi

tto

as

no

lik

fpe

lig

of

ma

tru

tol

ph

31

tci

m

tri

in the which being they thinke to finde mo commodities, and mo belightes appertaining to the body, then they boo in the bumaine being, though they greatly Deceive them felues: wheras thou being a Philosopher, the ende of whom is only the knowledge of the truth, wilte make none accompt of the plefures of the body, to obtame the pleasure s perfectio of the mind. The which thing is the bery operation of bumain nature: wherby working as man, thou deferueft to be fo called:but not they that worke like beaftes: as also likewife that deseructb not to be called fper, that would not burne, nother that lighte that shewed not forth some kinde of Chininge. Ele. Trucipe whiles 3 was a man , I was a great louer of the truth:and by this oncire caufe (as 3 baue tolde the) 3 gave labour a longe time to philosophy, and afterward for this cause I departed from my countrye, leking afe ter one absode in the woslde, who coulde introduce me to the fecretes of the fame truth: bntil brine as thou feeft buto thefe colles of Circes, I was by ber trafformo R.i. mto

to

Die

b.

3中

31

t

3

ie

3,

Z.

d

2

12

E

info an Clephante, of the which beinge Fam not pet fully refoluce, whether it be better thor pours of not. And ther fore I wil not belove the thus at the first: but falswing the zultoe of true philolophers, tobo although they belone nothing without the reason therof, neyther dos they let arive thorn at nought, that is lapoe fanto them, though they buderstande it not:pfit be not fo farre contrary to the order of nature that it appere manifelly faulseiof it selfe. For he, who thoughte not that there were any thing, but that that be understode, should be counted a foole: I wil therfore barken by what reafor thou thoughtest to be me a mooste greate benefitte in reftoring me the bus maine beinge: and if it fall be fuch as may proue buts me, that your being is better then ours, (as it fencth that thou thinkest them, this nature lefte, and 3 becomen man againe, 3 will glatip ree tous me with thee into my countrye. Phi. And I on the other part promite thee, if then half proue onto me, that your be inge is better then ours, that then 3 will pape

Dave Circes, the will transfourme me at to into one of thefe beattes, ves and a wil line afterward bere with thee: the freche bath pleased me so much, and the so mos helt proceding fuch as in bede belongeth to a reght Philosopher. Ele. 3 will not binde my felfe berevnto, for though it feme that I much care not to become man againe, 3 felte lo great an alteration and travaile in my transmutation. (an occasion that I now agre not fo eale le to chaunge this fate againe) I finde not yet in debe in this fate fo many come modities, that I may indge it better then pours. But what reason hast thou, that indaing your being to much better then ours , boeft comfort me fo earneftive to become man againe: Vi . 3 will tell thes it, and because thou art a Philosopher, I will procede with thee philosophically. Thou knowest that though there be in this woulde almost an infinite number. of kindes of creatures, that yet there canne none bee founde whoe hath not fome proper and particuler operation the whiche groweth in the same kynde R.v. br

íngt

CE IL

fore

but

ers.

otth

ther

South

De it

the

din

abte

that

Eda

reas

ofte

bus

1 88

gis

hou

EO

ree

Mi.

e.H

bei

hid

ape

by that fourme, that geneth it that being that it hath inberby till it lacketh of the beinge it can not also lacke of the more Ele. Dea and if it were other mile nature thoulde baue made them in payne, the whiche is impossible. Vii. Thou knowest also that the nature. and the being of thinges, is knowen, by their operations . And they fave that we have molte noble, and belt being, the whyche have befre, and most noble overations: for man is not able to knowe the caufes. but by their effectes. Ele. Dea , for the knowing the causes of them sciues and then by the meane of the knowledge of them to know their effects, apportameth onely to the firste cause, the whiche is oc casion of all. vii. And by these tipo foundations, thou maple manifelly perceine of the being of man is far more perfect, then the being of beaftes. # 02 what is the proper operations of beattes: Ele. The percetumg, I thinke : for the nous tilbing, growing, and the ingendering. they have in common together with the plantes: but for havinge the ferife oulp, thep

the

mi

El

bv

m

T

let

th

br

al

ſa

th

fo

b

fe

ú

٥

b

t

they are heaftes animate. Pli inhat meanest thou by the perceaumace Ele. To knowe the nature of thinges. by the meanes of the fenfes. Vli. And: what is the operation of man? Ele. The same I thinke, though the knowes. ledge of manne be called intellective:and that of beaffes fenfitue. for this rour bnberstandinge, can knowe nothing at all without the fenfes, Mi. fave not that they be one thynge . for foo thou houldest erre:nepther save thou als fo, that the intelligence of manne, canne understande nothinge without the fens fes: for it may four me and bronge forthe within it selfe, many intelligible then, des, and many conceptes, ingenderinge one thinge by the other, without the belpe of the fenfes. But it is bery true that the bearnninge of them, have vecco bed from the fenfes: for there canne be no thinge at all buder Rode, that the fracte bearnninge thereof bath not forcunge frome the sensytiue knowledge: and in this forte, this propolition thoulde be un-T Ele Those are muenberitobe. R.it.

the

1024

ere

tes :

nb

eir

tte

the

18:

8.

he

dh

of

th

2

10

rs

r

ıt

.

15

.

e

tions, and bayne fantalics, the whiche not berng necessary to the conscruation of the berng, seeme rather to buquiete. and kepe forme thoughtefull, then to amp thunge els. It fuffifeth bs, to be able to know the nature of thinges, that are profytable for bs,or necessary or telectable, with our fensitive knowledge: the whi che 3 thinke to be no leffe infertour then this your intellectine, that you fo call. Vli, Dave not lo, of that that thou knowest not: for thou knowest that it apperters neth not to the blynde, to gene judgement of colours. Ele. I will proue it thee. Tell mea lytle: howe muche the moze a knowledge is certapne, is it not fo much the moze perfecte: Vii. Pea. Ele. And that of the lence is moothe fure about all Vi. And who affureth thee of others. Ele. Wibo: 3 mp felfe: Do not 3 this: fee that the leaves of vonder baye tree, the whiche is ouer agapuft be, are grene:and am fure the reof, in fuch forte, that pfall the worlde woulde agree to fave the contrarp, I would never beleve it. And what affuraunce shouldest thou pauc that

Ť

that thou were not deceived, and that they. fand not true: Ele. Df what other affus raunce Moulde 3 have nobe, if 3 fee it? Vli. To knowe that those eve were not decepued: and this thou myahtest have: bauinge the bnderstantinge, whereby thou thoulbest he more certaine then thou arte-bauing onely the fence; and that this is true-harben buto me, and & will make the molt fure therof. Tel me: leck thou the sonne vonderstbinkest thou that be goeth, or not? Ele. It feineth to me that he fan beth Avil. Vh. And howe bigge thins kell thou that he is and of what coloures Ele. I thinke him about the greatnes, of thou were one rounde bodye as he is: and be feemeth buto me of the coloure of thefe ozenaes. Vii. See bowe muche thou beccauest the selfe to save, that the sensitive knowledge, is mooste true of it felie, and without the leabt of the binders standinge: for of three thinges that thou lavelt, two are moste falle, and pet thou thynkest to see the trueth theras. And what are thev. Ele

R.nu.

That

JMI

whiche

ation

uiete.

o any

ble to

e pro

table.

inbis

then

I.Vli.

west

rtep:

ment

02e a

nuch

And

e all

ee of

ot 3

the

anb

fall

1110

li.

aug bat

ee.

That the Sonne moueth not and that be is of to finall bignes: for he moneth for Swiftely, that be bath no comparison at all, epther with waste, as with any other thing of the world, having every vay once (beying brainen by the firste moune)to compale the earth, lo farre dillaunt from bim, wherby be mult make a farr greater circumference, then that of the earthen globe, the which they lay is more the twentre and two thousand myles in compasse. And belides this, it is greter then the earth about a bunteet the fear and four times. as thou myghtest playnely knowed thou were wactifed in mathemeticall thous ges. The which are no lette fure to our bnberflanding, then it is to thee to knows that the colour of the leaves of ponder bay tree are grene, wherof thou becomest not thy felfe:but they half not the fuerty there of as thou fouldeft have, of thou habbeft the understanding. Ele. And why for Because thou shouldest be able to difcerne, which are the proper fentibles, of one fence, and whiche are the common, and

#### The feath Dialogue.

and are knowen by more fenter and thou Mouldest knowe, howe no lense can be becepued in the knowledge of his viover Sensiblesia due distaunce bevon betwens the one and the other and the middes vio po:cionate: and certapne other conditions necessary to lyke operations. And thou shouldest knowe also, howe it might be easelve occeaned by the common sensis bles: whereby thou shouldest see, that thou couldest not be occeaned in judgmae that those leaves are grene, the bue buffaunce being betwene thene eve and them, and the anse lyghtfome, and the colour, beyng the proper objecte of the epe: as thou arte beceaned of the moung, and of the greatnes of the fonne, both the one and thother berna common fensities. So that pravie noo more to muche the knowledge of the fences, the which is the weakest of alt, pf it be not balpen by the understandinge. El. And what are the other? Vli. Ther are three powers, or knowing vertues: the frafte of the which, are the biderstans binges of thole leperated lubitaunces that continually turne the beauens, the object R.b.

UMI

but be th foo

on at

other

ng)to

from

cater

then

men

alle.

arth nes.

thou

bone

owe

bap

not

Deft

يو) د

eto

5,of

on, ind

of the whiche binberstandingen, for that they are not a fhape of any material body, not bepend in no forte by matter are the thapes that fland by them feines, not have no nebe in they? being, of any matter at all:and though also those unberstandinges known the material shapes, yet they have regard to them in the immaterial kindes. that they have in them felues, or els in the frafte cause, the which for bernge the oc calion of all thinges, contevneth theym all in it felfe. There is also one other know king bertue, the which for bernga shape of a body of a materiall organne, and bounde thereforto, bath for an objecte the materiall haves. But in fo muche oncly as they are in the fame matter, and by saule the matter is the fyzite beginninge to beupbe, and to make thinges lingue ter.it foloweth that this power can not knowe but perticuler thonges, and this is the fenle. There is then one other power or knowing bertue, almoofte a meane betwene thefe tipo: and this is our bus berstanding, the which bernge no shape of boop, not pet bounde buto any corporail

The fenth Dialogue?

eall digan, but a power of our sonle, bath not so an object these materials spapes, in as much as they are, or depende by the same matter: but in as much as they may be considered at they, owne proper nature. Whereby he who will be be that the those, must not onely seperate and denibe them from the same matter, but muste spoyle them of all the conditions that so sowe it. And thus commet they be where standings to be so sarre superioure between some some some the sense, in knowing, as he is inferiour but o these systematical with thee.

bis knowledge is more fure: for the sense not knowinge but perticuler thinges, and sensible bodyes, the whiche are eucr in movinge, and goo continuallye varyinge, canne have no sure knowledge of them. For before thou hast made sudgement of a thinge, that goeth varyinge, and alwayes mouth, it is alreadyed in an other beynge, dynaric from that wherin it was, when thou syst beganst

to

2 that

boby,

re the

hane

er at

inges

bane

nbes.

n the

te ac

mys

kno

bave

and

e the

nelp

bps

nge

que

not

this

oms

ane

bns

ape

יסמו

rail

to confider it and to thou canff not have of it anve furenes, or certentie of anve iudgement. Wibere our bederstandinge withwawing the things fro the matter, and confidering they? proper being, and benibinge there beynge in his partes, or compoling their preticates, lubitantialles and accidentalles, with they subjectes, hath most certaine knowledge of they, na ture. Ble. Wilhat perfect knowledge can be bane (for example) of man, pf be confider him without matter: for that there is no man, but be is of fiche and bones The matter of thinges is of two fortes: thone of the lubich is called comune and the other particuler. The comune matter of man is the fielbe, the bones, the finoes and other thinges:and the varticuler mats ter is this flelbe, these bones, and these fonces. And this perticuler is that, that going continually buto backing, alwaies parieth. And without this the understans bing considereth it: but not vet without the flethe and bones: wherebr confeder man as a reasonable creature of boones, and flelbe and mortall: and in this forte binis DI

te

fu

E

ti

8

t

bufuerfally, and without perticuler mate ter, be commeth to be bnuariable : and as fured knowledge may be had of him. Ele. Baue not we also the phantalis that both the felfe fame : for it recepueth the Junages of thinges by the fenfes inv materiallye, and belides this deutdeth and maketh all that it lifteth, and at all times when it will. Vis . It is true that the fantalie is a power loo noble, that some beretofoze have bouted, that it. is the felfe fame thing in bs, that the bus declianding is . And they that have not thought thus, have law that the unders standing at the least, coulde not worke withoute the phantalle, the whiche is most true. But this maketh not vet that it is not farre more inferior then the bus berstandinge : and that this is true, the fantalpeisa minister of the binberstandyng, and ferueth it continuallye in bis operations, and those powers that are made by nature for the leruice of others. are leffe parfect, then the others: as thon mailt manifelity fee in thy felfe, that the outer lenfes, as are the light, the hearing and

ane

mpe

nge

ter,

anto

,02

lles

tes.

ma

t be

Det

no

Vij.

283

und

ter

Des

ats

cle

bat

les

m

ut

er

es.

2te

حادا

and others, for that they ferue to our com mon fense (the which bath not for object one onely fensible, as they have, but al) are leffe noble then be . And be then that fcrueth onto the estimative or fantaly, us also farre leffe noble then that . But pf thou wilt be more fure bereof, consider the operations of voure fantalie, and thole of our understading, and thou shalt fee boine farre the fantalle is inferiour bnto the understäding. For though your fantalie take the femblaunces, and remelentations of thinges immateriallye, it can'not vet take them. inthout the vio perties of the matter that are, the being in quantitie, the being in place, and in tome.and fuch like: whereby you canne neuer imagin any thing at all withoute thefe conditions. The which bappeneth not buto our buberstanding that can per ceine the nature of thinges, without confidering quantitie, or place, time, or baris etie and fuch like appertaining to f matterit is true that be getteth thefe his knoledges, from the images that are in the fatafp,immaterially: for be could not get them of the things it felf, for being fo fpt rituall

rituall. Belides this, althoughe poure phantalie.can make allo, and beute as it thould be, to make of a borfe, ta man,a centaur:and to feine a man without fete & without hands it can not vet deute the matter from the forme, nor the accidents from the fubffaunce:02 make them toges ther as our understanding both. And this is, for that the fantalie comprehendeth both thone and thother with one only le fat ton, and in one oncly subjecte. Besides this it can never magin any thing, that it bath not sene tofozc:and of not altoge ther, pet at the least his partes. Ele. Pape I wil not graunt the this pet. For we als fo do comtate and thinke of many things that we never lawe . Tell me a little , the thepe when he flieth the wolfe, boeth he five him for that his coloure displeaseth him, or because be hateth bis Chape:vii. Bo. Ele. Wilhy both be then five bim! Hi. Becanfe be thinketh him to be his enemp. Ele. And pet notwithstanding be never lawe, what thing batred was: fee then bowe we can thinke on things that we never lawe. Vii. It is true that you baue

n that taly, is But yf nlider , and i fhalt crour your id reallye, e propeing

ar com

obiect

but al)

t per conparinat-

nd in

anne

oute

neth

the act

ipt-

hane a power in pou called estimatine. the which walveth, and getteth forth of those thinges that the sense bath sens, certerne untentions, and certeine proprietics that fall not under the knowledge of the fenfes, as for an example the birbe boeth, lobo feme a frame, thunketh the fame to be good to make a nefte for her young; and therefore for takethit and carieth it. awave. And as the thepe both, that leeth the wolfe, and indaeth bim an enempe, and fiveth him . The whiche intentions are not lentible, for that they fall not bnber the knowledge of the senses . And with this vertue you image, that that you hand folowe, and that that thoulde be anothed . Activithstanding these lyke intentions, that you get out of the fenfiline thinges, are molt few, and they are onely necessarve to the conservation of pour being:as hatreds, losowes, belight, mofit , burtfull and fuch like are . The which bertue our children also baue, in that age, in the which they ble not reafo, and fooles also baue it, the whiche is more. But the climative of managetteth but

put belides this many mo intentions of chinges, not onch necessary to the come fernation of his being: but also bery goor Mable to the good and perfecte being: Belides this you do it by a certaine natur eall instruction: by the whiche the Shepe feinge the Wolfe, without thinking on any thinge, thinketh that he should fleet wher we take like intentions of thinges, not by naturall infinition, but by a certaine descourse quided by reason, y which me bane, conferringe one thinge with an other: wherby fuch power in be is cab leb comtatine, and many call it particules reason: for it considereth the intentions, and the properties of perticuler thinges, after that forte that the buberstanding both of the brinerfall thinges : and there fore if a man fe a wolfe, though he image bin to be his enemy, be wil not pet moue forthwith to five bun naturalive, as the Sohene moulde, for if he fe bum bounde, fo that be thinketh be can not burte him, be will go nere him and fee him . But if he Spall fee him come towardes him, lofe and spen mouthed, like one oppressed with bunger S.i.

UMI

th of

cers.

etics

fthe octh-

ame

ung/

eth it.

leeth

mpe,

ions tons

And

that

ulde

lpke

mff

are

n of

abt.

The

· in

ufó,

e is teth

but

#### The fourth Dialogue.

hunger, fiercely running, conferring all thele thinges together, he will indge be commeth to burthim: inherfore he mall chale to ronne away. So that thou maieff fee howe much all thefe powers are more verfecte in bs then in pou. Ele. 3 bit berstande some of those thinges that thou theiself me and fome I buderftand not. Vii: This commeth of the nature, the Anbiche can chane no boober : inherefore become man anapne, who is the most no de of all creatures, and thou that boder Gende all together. Ele. And inhat is the minervall cause of his noblenes: Vi. Two powers that he properly bath, the whiche none other beaft bath, that make him most excellent of all others. The pre of the which is called buberfranapag, and the other is called woll .Ele. And what operations growe of thefe

powers, that make him superior to be powers, that make him superior to be Pli. From the binderstanding the know ledge of thinges, and from the will, the willings and not willings. Ele. Dos not the sence and appetite the setse same thinge in use Vi. Pea, but so smuch as

is onely necessary buto your life, and fat more imperfective for they work not brilly m man: for the confernation of the betires but of the good ant happpe beinge. For the understanding beginning with him. for that a thing is first understode before it is willed or refused) perceiveth not only the finguler thinges, as the fence both for thes is the most bale operacion, because, as I tolde the before, for that they barne continually, one can not get of them arty true certaintie of any thonge at all) but understandeth the universalles, forming in hom felfed knowledge reprefentating of mo indivilibles, of one onely kinde, in the whiche mo perticulers doo equally agre, the whiche knowledge he maketh in this maner . The phantafpe repres fenteth a femblaunce buto the buderfant bing, and the kinde of one onelve man: inith those conditions, that make bim to be one onely indiutible, that is to lave. that be is in one perticuler place, and that be is now, and of frich thape, and fuch: and for that fuch one is not foud as bath thefe 5.U. fuch.

UMI

ing all

dae be

Mad s

maieft

e more

and F

it thou

d not.

re, the

erefore

oft no

bnder

phat is

bath.

, that

thers.

erstan

U.Ele.

f thefe

know

il . the

Dog

e fame

nch as

ישמ נ

fache conditions, other then that indimb fible ancies the imperstanting in thes knowledge, knoweth none other things then that perticuler manne . But if he tourne after into that refemblaunce and bypon that hymb, and begin to bispoile bun of those perticuler conditions, taking all that away that is perticuler, in that promisible; and beholding only the bus maine nature, the whiche is in him, for meth in him felf an intellective kind, hein ging forth thes buinerfall knowledge: the which is, that bumaine nature is a sopposall fubitaunce, mostall, and able to verceine reason: and that in this, all men squally agree. Ele. And what more pers fectio in it felf bath this briverfal knows Ledge of this your understandinge, then the perticuler knowledge of oure fense bath! Vis. A greater fuerty of knows ing then that , that thou knowest is fo, and none otherwife: and that thou cant not be deceived: the which thing the fen-Citive knowledge can never baue. for be that feeth this man, and that other man. refonable, knoweth not pet herefore affine redly

IIMI

rei

bo

7

ATT

m

15

an

en ber

fin

be

by

bel

pe

an

in

(III

tin

(en

redire that cuery man is reasonable. And to be that feeth that a Dogge percenueth, and a Borle perceiveth, he thall not know bo this that all Dogges, and all Borfes percepue. But he who knoweth that man is wone other thing, then a realonable creature, knoweth that every man wreas femable:and be to bo knoweth that a beat us none other then a corpozall Aubstaunce? animiate of a lenlitude loule: knoweth that enery Dogge, and every Horse berne & beaft percetueth. And belides this be is fore, that that, that he knoweth, wi Wikill he can not be decepted: for he knowleth it be too proper cause, forafinuche as the being man is cause, that this and the office perticuler man understandethand the bemiga beatte is occasion that this Dogge and that Hocle percemeth. Ele. Sure les I beginne to knows, that this pour intellective knowlege, is far more noble, for the certeentie thereof, then our ferific this knowledge is. Mi. Dur bibers fambying can also perceive, thinges not onelpholeip and let all togethes, as pour lenie boeth: but out confider feperatelpe, S.iy.

IIMI

IN

ige

be

den

dla

ing

hat

bus.

faza

gin ge:

158

e to

rett

ers

ms

bert

mle

oms

fo.

mŒ

fen-

e be

an.

Mus

colp

all the intentions, and all the proper fea that are in their particuleripe: wherein for an crample, when bee feeth a whote. thinge, be can of him felfe bnberskands what thrng whytenes is, and howe it in a colour seperature of the sevinge bertuen and what bode that is, in whole funerfue ciall it is grounded, where as your fence can not knowe whate, but in knowing a white thinge, and comprehendinge with one like knowledge, the Subjecte with the fourme and acadentes. for the feing bers tue can not take the colour of him felf. but the thinge coloured. And that this is true: marke beive you never make indeement af colours, but onely of thinges colouments as alfo all those men bo, twho foloto oucip the knowledge of the lence. Ele. Truely this war of knowinge, is very planne and dilimcie. Vli. Dur hnderstanding care! alle, by knowing perfectly the nature of: thinges, affiguninge and penving, let them? together, and lukework beupbe themet the iphich the fence ean not do. Am knowner that the subfraunce receppeth and in them netb the accidentes and that the bodies [nal Acine

Weine the colours, the which are accidents be putteth these two natures togetherse faying affirmativelye, the bodye is a fubi staunce: and so knowpage that the sub-Caunce is governed of it felfe and that the coloure can not be but in others, he wil be upde, and seperate these two natures. with benyinge the one not to be the other. faringe the coloure is no substaunce. And belides this, be can with many of thele affermations, and of thefe negations; bringe forth manye diverse conclusions. that the fence could never have knowens the which thing you can not bo. for thous you are somethinge that is novsome unto vou pour do it not affremunez :02 Cenvina by mave of discourse, for thus operation vaffetb your power: but quiteb by theaps vetite that dalveth poil, withque lame thought at al fo to to .: Fil. And this also I bnderfand berp wel. Fin Dur bnteuftans tong cluneth pet bighen: for he loking on the femblaunces, and woon the images of thefe things that the fenfes have revoled in the fantali, waiveth out of them that knoe ledge of many mo things, then thole if the ferice D.uy. 2.1.... d

UMI

er feet

ereun

obote.

ande

ethen erfu

lence ing a

mith.

b the

t berd

f, but! tenes!

ment:

anche!

welp:

eand.

Cape !

themi

t the

(DOMEN

Michal Maint

teine

lenies have knowen, afwell the inner fenfes, as outer. fo: by the meanes of the he knoweth the univerfall natures, and the fourmes seperate from the matter. and the intelligences that move the bear And fonally, the forte cause of all thinges, buto the whiche knowledge, nevther the phantalle not the elimative. mozany other of vour powers can arine. Andafter what forte canne bear rine buto the knowledge of the fort canfest Vli. Pot onely by negation , as many have lapbe : but pmagminge a. foodie cause, and then after benoinge all the medicates of the fame, the which have m them am imperfection at all, as all the material conditions are, the which we fee to be in thefe corporali creatures, faringe: that the first cause can not be engenbed, is incorruptible, and not bartable, by accibent, 0; by any alteration, not taken from any place, not mabe, not fubiccte to anve povnt of continuatice and fuch other thms ces: not also only by that other meanes of valling ercellence, as certaine others lav, afforming that it paffeth in goodnes, in brantie

beautve in amiablenes, and in all other perfections, al good things, farze, louing. and perfecte that we fee in this biniverfal Ivolo. But be can know it loking in hun felte. for be confidering the nobilitie of his nature, the which confesteth onely in this, that binderstanding all thinges, as wel fuch as are inferror onto bum, as those that are above him, can after a certapne fort make him felfe like buto them all, and become all. And confidering afterwarde that imperfection the which be findeth m him felfe, that is fo fav: that be is in power onto all thinger, but not pet in acte, and therfore buberflambeth not alinaves but fomtimers, & fomtime no: he can fourme inthin how felfe a kende of an understand Ding more high, and ir ore perfect then bim felfe, the which may be allbaves in acte. and may alwayes buterfram all thinges. and hath to unberstobe them from the he ginninge, and can not be in power to recease any intelligence againe, haming the kindes in him felfe of al thinges that baue bene, or cuer thatbe. And this is the forfte caule, who haven a concrued, and alwaies €.b. aoners

IMU

mer

of the

Land uter.

bear

Hie of

edare.

tiue,

rine.

ear.

CRU-

ae a.

re all

haue I the

e fee

nge:

veb.

SCC

ront

aym,

sof

lap.

· m

utie

governing, with fo maruelous an order. this butuerfall world, mutte of necestitie baue buderstode, and alwaves buderstan beth all thinges after one forte, and with one lette intelligence. Ele. A merueb lons propertie of the humaine understans Pli. And thes commeth buto bin, for that be cannot onely buderstand, but percouse that he understandeth: the which thing the fence can not bo. For ale though the epe fee, and the care beare : vet the ere feeth not p he feeth, not the eare her reth not be bereth. for they are powers bound unto corporal organs, whereby they ran not bolive and turne into them felues. Witheras the underftading, being a fpirity als benine power, returning into him felf s bnderfranding that he bnderfradeth.cam knowe him felft and his perfection: where by man onely amogett at other recatures. sat knowebis owne noblenes, The head wen although it be meogruptible; and of fo aret noblenes, knoweth not pet of be bath tino the fume bun felf, although he be the gretest minister of nature, e geneth light to all the other celeficall bodies , knoweth מבוענו not

1

21

I

.

Ì

not this his fo great worthnes, as loke wife all the other creatures do not . 15ut man knowing his great mobieness ercels lencie, and that he is superior unto al other creaturs, or rather almost the end of all for knoing the bertue and property of al thing nes afwell animate-as inanimate-be may ferue him felfe in all his deffers) reiopfeth chiefly in him felf:and lweth ma belite s in a maruelous e mellimable contentation. And for that be may the better boo this be bath alfo an other power, p which keveth mooft perfectly, all thefe her buderstans binges, called intellective memorie: the which is to farre more worthy there vous fensitme, as those understandinges of the inhichthe fine memorie is keper at mas morthy, then those sensitive knowledges that your fenfitue memorie kepeth. Ele. D mot bappy conbitio of humain nature. Vi. Man bath belides this this other was perticited his binderstanding can not con ceiue any conceite fo bighe, and ineftima. ble, that be can not by the meane of fpech. beclare it bntoother men. Ro, we bne bertande not oncly the boyce as a found,

Der.

effitie

ftan-

with

ruch

Dany

onto

and.

the

2 ale

pet

ber

ers

cs.

utu

cif

an

er;

20

ío

th

be

bt

b

ıf

to as figuifying of fome comme pattion; as tope, forothe , fears and fuch lybe are. as you bo:but we also buberstand the fine milication thereof ; by the meanes of the toopes betermined books, to beclare our meaninges, in fuch fort as we belt lufte: whereby it is that man onely amonge all other creatures is able to take learning. 180 reason inhereof they inho know little may be made better terned and more intie by them that knowe more: and although the marker can not fourme in the fcoller. an intelligible hynde of that that he teas cheth him, be not with fantinge minifes reth to boun the wave and meanes, that he may of him felfe fourme it. Certeine moth wife Egiptians berng beretofoze moued by thos to great bertue and propertie of the bnberstandinge, called man, earthip god Divine, and celetrall creature meden ger of the goddes, Lord of the inferioure: thinges, and familier of the fuperiours: and finally a myracle of nature. Truely this biderstandinge mae

ele. Truely this binderstandinge mae keth him so excellent, and so noble, that it is no meruell, that they have called him.

bp

bo

VI

er

pe

in

tt

D

th

21

a

Ė

r

'n

b

n

t

by to troothy and bonozable names. Vli. The woll also maketh him no lette ercellent, then that his other perticuler power that be bath: by the meane of the which he woll as will not freipe, that that he indgeth good or pli, with the bus berikandung:as you also folowe, or five, that you tudge convenient, or inconveni ent with the fense. Ele. Could not the appetite do the felfe fame office, without toining other power in man: Pli . Ao:fo followinge the appetite, the fense cone reth or hateth only those thinges, that the fense knoweth:and notwithstanding we fee that man loueth many bertues, & hateth many vices, the whyche chaunce not bnder the fensitive knowledge. And this power (as 3 bane told thee) maketh man very noble: for it maketh bim free, and matter of all his operations. And this is for that the will is free, and bath not bene betermined by nature, moze bnto one contrarpe, then bnto an other. Ho; although the good be her obiecte, the is not therefore betermined more buto that, then buto the contrarve. Wherfore

ti

is a

I

P!

Ш

3.

B

b

,

H

D

1

2:

t

2

t:

Z.

it is not with it as with the naturall clementes, who being nere their objectes and having one distaunce between them. wan not chose but worke : as it is mank feltly feire in the fore, the whiche haning a matter by it apte to burne, can not flap to not burneit. But our will, bauing & good thing fet before it, and thoughe it be formelwhat encloned by nature to for lowett, is not vet constrained by any nes refitie to love it : whereby the maye lous t and not lone it. Then al the other poins ers that main bath as a creature, are fubiecte bato this power, not alwayes in fuch fort that they can not be moued by their objectes, without the commaunder mente of the same will, but for that thep are bispoled and otherned, to move at all times that it pleafeth her. Where by at thoughe the light, when a visible obtecte is presented onto it, is moved naturally by that: the will mave commaund it that it turne it buto an other objecte, and so mave the boo to all the other sensitive somers. And there is no objecte, nor force at all, either of earthly, or celestrall thymges

tres, that can commaund her that the toll but that that the luft: the which is not fo with your fensitine appetite, for an obe iccte offered buto it, that it belireth, mo ucth of necessitie the beast to folow it na turally, and without any election, as cue ry body man well knowe, who will but gently observe your overations. Ele. And what worthines geneth unto man thus his free will? Vli. A worthmes for macueilous, that those chiefe wife men of Egipte (as 3 baue tolbe thee) called bim for this onely, the gret miracle of nature. Ele. for what cause: Vli. for that al other creatures , have habbe a certeine lawe, by the whyche they can comme to none other ende, then that the whiche was ordeined buto them by nature, noz can in no wife goo footh of those bons bes that the bath appointed unto them. And man, by having this will free mave obtaine a more woorthpe, or leffe worthp ende, at his pleasure : either in bins dinge him felfe towardes those thone ges, that are inferioure buto hom, or turning

le

tes

m.

nb

ng

dp

IA

it

b

es

us

11

be

in

W

0

P

ŭ

u

30

10

Í

0

Ê

throwing him felfe towardes those that are superiour buto bun . for if be will stre him felfe whole buto the belie : bot bing his countenannce, and face contr maily fired on the earth be fhall become as one that perceiveth nothinge, and like to the plantes and if be fhal motone bim felfe to much in the fensitive pleasure, be shall become tike the brute beattes: but of he lufting his face towardes heanen. playing the philosopher, that consider the beautie of the heanens, and the marnep lous order of nature, be thall change bint felf from an erthly beaft, buto an beuenby creature: and if he, dispiting all the impedimentes of the body, shall attende to beholde the dutine thinges, he that make him felfe almost a god . Who shall there then be that marualleth not at this man? tobo is not onely most noble and loade of al other beattes, but he bath also this perticuler condition, genen by nature, that be can boo, all that he woll fle, And what is then the cause, that this his woll having the good for an object, and wor king frely, you most commonly choling that

t

b

1

ti

n

C

8

p

2

2

-

ti

t

that that is not good: followe byces, and For that the leave bertne avarte: Vli. mill is fo marueloulive britch and knytte buto the fenfes, and that our understanbinge multe take (unto the knowledge of the inhiche understandinge, the election of the will foloweth)all his knowledges by the fence: who most commonive shew eth buto bim, in chaunge of the true good, a good disquised. Witherby the will being mainen and let loofe by the knowledge of that, and by the intilementes of the fenles. though the choie not that that is not good. at the least the flyeth it not: and the booth not fewerely the office, that the fhoulde, to commaunde the fensitive appetite: and fo all our errours devende finally, by those partes of nature: that we baue without reason, together and in comon with your and not by those by the which we are men. Ao more more Willes, caufe me nome to leave this beaftvibe nature and to become man agapne, to mp loffe was to great, to have bene fo longe tyme conwerted by Oppces into an Clephante. vii. And I graunt it thee by the aucthor

T.i. ritie

that

Mic

bole

nte

me

like

bin

, be

but

ent.

the

ep

mint

etts

un

e to

ike

ere

int

of

ers

at

dn

lic

020

ng

nt

with that the gave me Ble. Aglefemos. Db, what a fayze thringe, Db, what a marueplous thing it is to be a mane Db bow well 3 notice knows it better then 3 Did before, for 3 hane promed the one and the other: Db, howe fame the inabte fer meth to be buto him, who is alwaies woll to be in barkenes, and howe muche the good femeth better buto bim, that is accultomed to proue the entil ? Wizetches and buhapppe are thep, who for a lyttle pleasure that the senses brynge, and our parte without reason, will lyue lyke bear fes. Tilufes 3 thanke thee mooft brabive, that thou balte with the learning caused me to knowe the truethand with thme eloquence balt attured me to folowe it: the Cobbes gene thee for me inft retoarbe, of the delictes towardes me: and for that it Semeth to me that nature bath theweb me that it apperterneth buto man to to boo. turning me buto that frall mouer of this whole worlde, who beyng the cause of all thinges, must also be the fyzite, and point cipall cause of that, that bath chaunsed of me: and that I finally baving knower the th

th

be

th

m

bí

pi

EÌ

10

ir

al

7

the imperfection of all other creatures, and the perfection of the humaine nature, am become man againe: I geve him infinite thankes. And because I can not shewe my selfe in any otherwise thankefull but bim, saving in singenge his praise, in some parte, and as much as my powers cannot ertende: I pray thee Allisses, that standing some what still, with denoute science, whiles I sing this most holy himne, thou also bono; that sirfle cause, from whence all our welth is berued.

Unimersal nature of the world, beare shouth is binme of mine:
To woodes kepe scilence, and ne windes, repose your sclues in fine:
Vabiles of this order of the hole, so marnailous and so fayre,
Of the first mouer I do sing, and cause of earth and ayre
Of all incorruptible thinges, and that corrupte may be,
Of the first cause therof I sing, and eke of that I see.
That balaunced a midde the beauens, the earth for her due place,

mios.

bata

Di

E ns

and

te fe

tobt.

e the

1 ac

tehen

pttle

bear

bipe,

delma

thure

t:the

e. of

bat it

att 6:

DOG.

this!

of all

potitive for the second

west

the

And of that, that the waters swete, doth sprinkle un ber face. To nourish all that mortall is, and of the same alfo, That bath fo many fundry kindes, of creatures bigh and low, Made for the service al of man: and of that, that to bim Hatb genen an understanding cleare, to thende that be fould climme. And bane thereby the knoledge true , of that first cause of might, Andthen a wil in bim wel fet, to loue the fame arygbe. O yemy powers euery one spraise ye that cause with me, And let the gladnes of my Spirite, thereto myth you agre. O alye giftes then of my foule, with me fe that ye fynge, Of thuniverfall and fyrst cause, of all and enery thinge. Of mine understanding theu lyght, and fredome of my will, Agree in one of that Same cause, the beauens with praise tofyll.

0 a

No.

The

Vli. ari lia but 3 f nat ter, bef to bat bat the 31 Bir asi oth

ent

bca

D eners

O enerlasting moner great, that no beginninge bad,

Nor fall baue ende, thy creature manne, that thereto is most glad,

Is be that fyngs this daye thy praise, and prayo eth with all his powers,

That bonor high, and glory great, to thee be yeares and bowers.

Vli. Thou hable not this knowledge of the first cause of this hole world, whiles thou lineoft in that body of a beaft . Agla . for but as some as 3 was become man agains I felt it fpzing in my mind , almost as my naturall propertie: or rather to fav bets ter, I felt it returne into me againe. For before I was transformed by Circes in to an Clephante , 3 remember. that 3 had it (but nowe 3 have this more, that bauinge muche moze perfectly knower the noblenes of man, then 3 de before, 3 Degin to thinke that this firste cause hav sing loned hum, about all other thinges, as the making him more noble then any other beatt both plainely beclare, that his ende, fail not be like buto thend of othet beattes: tobo not having the understans opnge

.

25

ı

le

d

e

fe

th

48

77

me

ms

bing, have no knowledge at all of the fame firfte caufe as be bath. Vli. Trues lpe it is not to be thought, the perfection of our bnocritanoing, being the know, ledge of the truth, and we not able to get it perfectly whiles we are in this bodye, both for the manye impedimentes of the fame body, and of many other things, and also for the sportnes of the time, that we kne: that he shal not get it at the least after that be shalbe free, and lose from that bobve, of nature baue not made bom in baine. The inhich may be truelye affire med, fins be is neuer able in this lyfe to obteine to his ende, as all other thinges Do. And Cometimes to get all that, of the whiche he whiles we live, tafteth some time but a small parte: and so muche the moze, by bow much toe being free from thole pleasures, that the sense gructh, line in fuch fort as belongeth buto reasonable creatures . Aglefemos . Then lette be five Willes, let be five thefe wicked bankes, where this deceitfuil and fubtill woman, with ber intifements, causeth men to like not onely after the faction of beaffes, but

-

in the ton the care included this this

wa

am

IN

to the bodyes of them also. And let be retourne to lyue freely, and accordinge the
vie of reason, in our owne bowses: nor
care not, I pray thee, to see this noughtic
inchaunture agayne, less the with some
newe deceite, kepe thee longer with her in
this her moost vohappy reasme. Vii.
Then let vs go, for I desire no thing else:
and I perceive alrely that the goddes (alwayes favourable votto him, that seketh
after the beste sorte he can to be lyke
botto them) gene vs newe windes, very apte and prosperous for our naugation.

FINIS.

# IMPRINTED AT LON

don in Poules Churchyarde, at the light of the holy gholt by John Cawood, punter to the Duenes Pauctie.

> Cum privilegio ad imprimendum Solum.

30

2,

10

D

90

fo

at

in

24

ta

28

be

ne

110

ué

pe

:84

11,

ie,

IN